



The Town to the Western Winds..... [1.02]  
New Knight Squad Ceremony..... [1.03]  
The Valeria Chateau..... [1.04]  
Illsveil Prison Paradise..... [1.05]  
Re-opening the Trade Route - Under Traffic and Damzen..... [1.06]  
Telepath Tower to Mt. Chug-Chug..... [1.07]  
Establishing Cooperation with Sylvaland..... [1.08]  
Find the Aguelite and Germatron..... [1.09]  
Contacting the Guardians..... [1.10]  
The 71st Filgaian Summit..... [1.11]  
Data Tablets and Sielje Region..... [1.12]  
The Gate Bridge..... [1.13]  
Greenhell to T'bok Village..... [1.14]  
Kanon the Exorcist..... [1.15]  
Alchemic Plant..... [1.16]  
Escort the Son of the Guild Galad Master..... [1.17]  
Closed Mine Shaft..... [1.18]  
Coffin of 100 Eyes..... [1.19]  
Destroy the Diablo Pillars..... [1.20]  
Take Down Heimdal Gazzo..... [1.21]

RESISTANCE LINE (DISC 2)..... [2]

The Memory Maze..... [2.01]  
Rescue Ashley Winchester..... [2.02]  
Sacrificial Altar & the Grotto of Lourdes..... [2.03]  
Rescue Marina from the Frozen Lake of Hell..... [2.04]  
The Nuclear Dragon Grauswein..... [2.05]  
Lombardia - The Legendary Wing of Heaven..... [2.06]  
    Crimson Castle (OPTIONAL)..... [0.1]  
    Promised Catacombs (OPTIONAL)..... [0.2]  
Liberate the Raypoints..... [2.07]  
Trapezohedron..... [2.08]  
Fiery Wreckage..... [2.09]  
Before the Final Battle..... [2.10]  
    Island Outpost (OPTIONAL)..... [0.3]  
    Guardians of Filgaia (OPTIONAL)..... [0.4]  
    Werewolf's Den (OPTIONAL)..... [0.5]  
    The Guardian Lords (OPTIONAL)..... [0.6]  
    Fab Science Lab (OPTIONAL)..... [0.7]  
Last Ignition..... [2.11]  
Ending..... [2.12]

= = = = =

UPDATES

~~~~~

11/25/2006 - Started this transcript

12/29/2006 - Completed the Game Script from the start till the end

01/03/2007 - Did a spellcheck

04/20/2007 - Added Super Cheats to sites that can host this file

11/22/2007 - Changed the formatting and fixed a lot of errors  
while I was at it.

= = = = =

/[1] YOU'LL NEVER BE ALONE NO MATTER WHERE YOU GO /  
/ /

#####  
#[1.01] Prologue #  
#####

/[1.a] A young man ready for action/

????????????????????????????????????????????????????????????

[A truck is seen passing by a valley. Some men are briefing inside.]

Commander: We now know that the kidnappers are holding the boy hostage...  
up ahead in the old excavation site known as  
"The Withered Ruins. Time for the final mission check!

Musketeer A: (Did you hear about the newly formed special unit?)

Musketeer B: (If this mission isn't active, I probably won't get chosen.)

Commander: Hey, you! What are you babbling about?! What's your name?

[The musketeer stands.]

Musketeer B: Yes!

[The musketeer says his name is Ashley.]

Commander: It's people like you that are most dangerous in the field!  
Don't get in the way, understand, Ashley?!

[The truck stops by the ruins.]

Commander: Our 3rd mission is to rush into the ruins where the hostage is  
held. It's critical to secure the safety of the hostage first.  
Numerous monsters have been sighted at the ruins, so don't let  
your guard down. OK. Let's go. Charge!

~~Withered Ruins~~

[The musketeers enter the Withered Ruins.  
Ashley finds another musketeer standing before a hole.]

Musketeer: That clumsy fool! The first guy who ran through the fog fell  
into that hole there. Could you check it out?

@Musketeer: Sorry. I didn't mean to cause trouble.

[Ashley jumps into the hole. A man is lying below.]

Ashley: Hey. Wake up! Can you stand up?

Musketeer: A new recruit, huh? Looks like you messed up.  
It's because you tried to score big here so you'd be reassigned  
to the new unit that is forming.

Ashley: Take it easy. Stay here until the rescue team arrives.

Musketeer: We can't do that. Hey, look at that! W hoaa!!

[The musketeer shows a knife and throws it to a device.

The door beside it opens.]

Musketeer: Hey rookie, this is to celebrate your assignment. Hang onto it.

[Tool "Hurl Knife" acquired.]

Musketeer: The knife can be thrown with the ([]).  
It must have a use besides just turning the switch.  
You need to figure it out.

Ashley: OK, I'll give it a try.

[Ashley goes on, deeper in the ruins.  
He can hear a voice coming from a room before him.]

Boastful, Hoarse Voice--: Whoa. How'd this get so blown out of proportion?

[Ashley enters the room. He finds three bandits and the hostage.]

Leader: Our humble little abduction was to bring comfort to our lives.

Henchman A: A kidnapping was impossible for us from the start.  
What do you plan on doing, boss?  
It's about time those Musketeer boys came charging in.

Gangal: Oh, shut up, Zook. A real man would do something.  
Hey, Gerg. Isn't it your job to come up with ideas?

Gerg: After much thought, it's clear that kidnapping isn't our answer.  
Didn't I say that at the start?

Gangal: What? You giving predictions of disaster before we even start?  
What a waste of man power, wimping out like that. Really!

Zook & Gerg: .....

Gangal: Well, regardless, we've got our trump card.  
I'll get away no matter what.

Boy Hostage: Nothing good is going to come from holding me hostage!  
To start, I have no parents so who's paying the ransom?

Gerg: Hey boss, did you hear that?

Gangal: Oh... There go my hopes and dreams.

[Ashley hurls a knife to a torch, getting the hostage's attention.]

Ashley: (Hey...HEY!)

Boy Hostage: (What?! Who are you?)

Ashley: (I've come to save you. Are those three the only kidnappers?)

Boy Hostage: (Yes.)

Ashley: (Good. You did well. Do you have a name?)

Boy Hostage: (Oh course I've got a name!)

[The boy's name is Tony.]

Ashley: (OK, Tony. Quickly, can you work with me?)

Tony: (Sure, but what do you want?)

Ashley: (Draw their attention.)

Tony: (Sure.)

Ashley: (Great, We've got a deal!)

[Tony tries to get the kidnappers' attention.]

Tony: Hey, old man! How dare you treat me this way.  
You don't have the guts to properly kidnap anyone!

Gangal: What'd you say? Hey, you two, grab the brat and shut him up!!

[Tony runs around and the goons chase him.  
He steps on a weird floor.]

Tony: Catch me if you can!

[Tony jumps, activating a switch on the floor. The place starts shaking.]

Ashley: Hold it right there!

Gangal & Zook: Huh?!

Gerg: What?!

[A wall opens behind Tony. A monster is unleashed.]

<<BOSS: Sealed Monster Weapon - Kalivos>>

Tony: Waaahhh! I don't know why, but I had a feeling something like  
this might happen!

Ashley: If you keep talking, you'll bite you tongue!

Gangal & Zook & Gerg: Help! Please!

Ashley: Hey, you too!

[Kalivos appears, chasing everyone. They split up on a fork.  
The goons go to the right. Ashley and Tony go to the left.  
Kalivos goes after the goons, who come to a dead end.  
Ashley hurls a knife at Kalivos's back, allowing the bandits  
to escape. Ashley runs away too.]

[Outside...]

Radar Technician: Commander, a large lifeform has been confirmed in the ruins.  
Most likely, the trapped monster was released by accident!  
Unfortunately, highly volatile liquid explosives have been  
found in the monster's secretions. Commander, at this rate...

Commander: What the... Order the soldiers in the ruins to evacuate  
immediately! A huge explosion is possible, so we can't

handle it above ground. To minimize casualties, we must destroy the entire ruins at once. Release the safety on the large ARM. I'll authorize the use of the Rail Gun.

Radar Technician: You mean destroy the entire ruins? But we still have soldiers left in the ruins. It's possible the monster could escape before all of them evacuate. By destroying the ruins, some soldiers won't escape in time. Are you going to let them die?

Commander: ..... I'll take full responsibility.

[Inside, the group is still trying to run away from the monster. Tony trips.]

Tony: Dude!!!

Gangal: Why do we have to...!

[The commander appears.]

Commander: Evacuate immediately!  
We'll finish things off with a large-scale ARM.

Ashley: The large-scale ARM needs... But our team is still in the back part of the ruins! If you do that... I won't do it! I can't!

Commander: This is an order! If you disobey, you're in violation of regulations.

Ashley: I cannot sacrifice someone even if it is for the larger good. It's not just me. The commander and everyone else here doesn't want that to happen. Our hearts should be one. Please order those remaining in the ruins to evacuate. Even I can manage to stall for time. No. I'll stop this one!

[Ashley turns around and attacks Kalivos.]

[TUTORIAL]: \*Two Bosses can be attacked in two different places--the main body and the body parts. Defeat a Boss by attacking the Main Body at its name and reducing its HP to 0. Reducing the HP to 0 for the "Body Parts" won't defeat the Boss but will win EXP and Gella.

[Ashley defeats Kalivos.]

[Ashley, Tony and the others are able to evacuate the ruins on time before it explodes.]

Ashley: I ignored your orders and took matters into my own hands. I am prepared for my reprimand.

Commander: I hope so! Your punishment for this incident will be forthcoming! Until then, you're under house-arrest!

Ashley: Is that all, sir?

Commander: You have any objections?!

Ashley: No! no, sir!

-----  
Ashley:           And that is how this extremely long day ended for me, the new recruit. I did what I thought was right, but it was a violation of orders. I don't believe I was wrong. No one wants to see anyone get hurt. Even though the destination is the same, different people choose such different routes. I don't understand. I just don't understand it. Oh well, with my sentence, I have plenty of time to think.  
-----

-----  
/[1.b] A former hero now war criminal/  
~~~~~

[Five years ago...]

[In a forest, a big man runs away from a group of men.]

Man A:           That's strange. I thought we chased him in here.

Man B:           In this weather, even he'd be exhausted. He can't be very far. We gotta look some more! Call in a bunch of Barghests! They'll chase him out.

[The men leave the area.]

Escapee:         Are they gone? Tsk, this reminds me of that other time. But there wasn't any miserable rain back then.

[The escapee remembers a part of his past.]

[FLASHBACK:]

[In a castle, he and his comrades seem to be fighting a battle.]

[SCENE: Three men are gathered.]

Man:             Yes, blood did get spilled, but in an era of delusions, if someone doesn't stand up, even more blood will be shed.

[SCENE: A group of men, running.]

Man:             We'll blast on through! Don't delay a second!

[SCENE: A group of men in a forest.]

Man:             That's impossible! Why did we...No, why'd they die for something like that?

[FLASHBACK ENDS.]

Escapee:         This is no time to get stingy with the ammunition. I have to survive. My name still has no meaning.

[Meanwhile...]

Man:             Commander, the search party recovered these items from Point 12-SW.

Posse Leader: An ID card of a Slayheim Liberation Army Soldier.  
Here, give it to me.

[From the ID card, they find out that the escapee's name is Brad Evans.]

Posse Leader: There's no mistake. It's Brad Evans' ID card.  
OK, proceed to the recovery point.  
We must catch him before he gets through the forest!!

[Brad runs away from his pursuers. He reaches a cliff.]

Brad: (There's no turning back once you go over this cliff.  
But the Posse is closing in. Even if I die, I can't let my name  
be dishonored. I am "Brad Evans" of the Slayheim Liberation  
Army. I cannot delay. I must get to the other side of the  
forest quickly.)

[Brad goes down the cliff. On his way, he senses something.]

Brad: What?! Who's there?!

[A puppy appears.]

Brad: Oh, a puppy. Come on. Don't bark, please.

Voice: Hey, did you hear something over here?

[Brad hides behind a tree.]

Brad: Namumi!

Voice: Oh, it's just a puppy. Scared me. What a waste of time.  
Let's go. I'm not going to let the others get all the credit.

[Brad comes out from hiding. The puppy has a berry with him.]

Brad: You saved my butt, buddy. Wow. That took guts.  
You probably came into the forest to avoid the rain too.  
Let's get out of here together.

[Brad continues to find a way out of the forest.  
On the way, he acquires the tool, Kick Boots.]

[TUTORIAL]: \*Press ([]) with the Kick Boots and shock the target.  
Delivering this shock will cause all kinds of things to happen.

[Moving on, Brad encounters the hunters. He hides.]

Recruit 1: I wonder what just ran into the forest? A dangerous criminal?  
Maybe a very pale degenerate.

Recruit 2: Who knows? All I know is that we haven't been told anything and  
there's no need for us to know either.

Recruit 1: What would you do if he suddenly jumped out here?  
It wouldn't be a bad idea for us to catch him and get the credit.  
With a reward, I'll get a horse and return to T'Bok Village.  
It'll end my mercenary work.

Recruit 2: If you keep babbling, the search team will beat you silly.



Brad:            There's no order here. Were those two soldiers conscripted recently? That means there's a village nearby.

[A roar of something can be heard.]

Recruit 1:      What's that voice I hear?

Recruit 2:      It's a monster! Even the village animals have been attacked by it! Let's get out of here! We're in over our heads!!

Recruit 1:      But where will we go? And how will we get there?

[Brad comes out of hiding.]

Brad:            You guys are such trouble!

Recruit 1:      You...You're...

Brad:            Just stay down!

[BOSS: Parasite Colony Monster - Gremalkin]

[Brad confronts the monster.]

Brad:            (Sure are self-assured, Brad Evans. Lending a hand to your pursuers. Sure, I'll show you what it means to be a "hero." I'll take care of this before the incident gets any bigger!)

[Brad defeats Gremalkin.]

[Brad goes on his way.]

Recruit 1:      You saved us?

Recruit 2:      Hey!

[The Posse Leader, with some men, comes to the scene.]

Posse Leader:   His fighting is even more powerful than it was rumored to be.

Man:            I don't know if our forces are strong enough to defeat him.

Posse Leader:   There's a village on the other side of the forest, right?  
I've got an idea. Wait, Brad Evans.

[Brad is out of the forest.]

Brad:            (I'm out of the forest. I need a place to hide.  
What about that place...)

[Brad reads the sign.]

[TUTORIAL]:     \*North cape: T'Bok Village  
East: Great Plains

As you move ahead in the story, your next destination will become clear. However, places you have never visited do not appear on the field with a map symbol. To activate the Search System, press the ([]) button while in the field. Use the Search System and info about your destination to find the map symbols.

-----  
~~T'Bok Village~~

[Brad reaches T'Bok Village.]

Brad:            So this is it...?

[Brad faints.]

[After some time, Brad wakes up in a barn. He's being treated by a girl.  
The puppy he found in the forest is with them.]

Girl:            I'm glad you woke up. You were sleeping deeply, I thought you'd  
never wake up.

Brad:            Where am I?

Girl:            You're in T'Bok Village. In a stable. But all the horses are  
gone. My name is Merrill. Now can I ask you something?  
Is this puppy your friend?

Brad:  
-> 1. Yeah, but I just found him.

Merrill:         This is a very smart dog. He is the one who told me you were  
passed out in the rain. What's this dog's name?

[Brad says the dog's name is Rassyu.]

Merrill:         So, your name is Rassyu. I like that name!

Brad:  
-> 2. No. Isn't he from here?

Merrill:         No, I haven't seen him before. So I guess I can name him.  
Let's see... OK, from now on your name is Rassyu.  
Do you like it?

Brad:            I'm sorry, but I have to leave this village right away.

Merrill:         Why? You still need to rest! Wait!  
I'll get you something to eat.

Brad:            ..... You're not afraid of me?

Merrill:         Rassyu says you're not a bad man. Isn't that right Rassyu?

[There seems to be a commotion outside.]

Voice 1:         Hey! You can't do that in this village!

Voice 2:         Our intention was not to cause such a stir.  
What we do is for the sake of your village.

Merrill:         Stay here, mister. Don't worry, Rassyu and I will stay with you!

[Merrill steps outside.  
She sees Brad's pursuers are arguing with the villagers.]

Merrill: There aren't any bad people in this village!

Posse Leader: Hiding him will only bring your village misfortune.  
Surely you realize that.

[Brad steps out of the barn.]

Merrill: Hey, mister!

Brad: My name's not "mister" 'Sides, it makes me sound old.

Posse Leader: So there you are. So it's you, Brad Evans.  
I came to deliver something that you lost.

[The Posse Leader throws the ID Card to him.]

Posse Leader: So you want to take us on? That's fine by me, but realize that  
innocent villagers may be hit by stray bullets.

[The villagers panic.]

Posse Leader: Seize him!

Recruit 2: I'm sorry we have to do this. We're all from this village.

[The recruits take Brad away.]

Merrill: Was that man a bad man?

Posse Leader: A bad man? Ho ho! You got it all wrong.  
Now listen, young lady. That man is a "hero".

Merrill: A "hero"?

Posse Leader: Ha ha ha! Ho ho ho!

-----

Brad: Perhaps its... better this way. All I know is fighting.  
If I kept on going, all I would find is more blood and death.  
There are few places for someone whose only true home is on the  
battlefield. I'll consider this a vacation. After all, heroes  
aren't needed once the shooting stops. If peace means a world  
that needs no heroes, then that has to be better.

=====  
/[1.c] A sorceress just getting started/

~~~~~

~~Palace Village~~

[Some people are meeting in a room.]

Village Elder: Well, what about payment? Mercs don't work for free, you know.

Villager 1: You ought to be more worried about a Merc who works for free.

Old Man: You got that right! Har har har!

Villager 2: What are you laughing about, you old geezer?

Village Elder: Let's change the subject, OK? We must plan a counterattack!

?????: .....Ha... I wish someone would do something.

[A girl appears on the center of a table.]

Mysterious Girl: Sorry, sorry. Sorry for being late. I haven't quite got the knack of this Teleport Gem. For a minute I thought I had teleported to the wrong place again. Uh-oh. This isn't the Valeria household, is it? I knew it...

[The people nod.]

Villager 3: Excuse me, but... Who are you anyway?

[The girl points to herself. The people nod. She says her name is Lilka.]

Lilka: (Oh, boy. I messed up again. But at least I came to a place where everyone seems so nice. I know I should hurry, but I guess there's no harm in resting here for a while.

[Time passes. Lilka is in a room, talking to a child.  
A mother can be seen cooking in the kitchen.]

Lilka: What's weird is how they dump that stuff on rice to eat it!!

Boy: That is just so gross!

Lilka: Right?

Mother: Try this nice, warm treat.

Lilka: Mmmmm...

Mother: There. Do you feel better now?

Lilka: Sorry about the way I acted. I was just so nervous. I just can't get the hang of the Teleport Gem, you know, an item used for moving around. I'm studying magic, and this one item just seems to have it in me or something.

Boy: Wow! You know how to use magic?!

Lilka: A-Actually I'm still learning.

Boy: Wow, I'm so impressed!

Lilka: Oh, don't be impressed. Anyone can use magic, y'know.

Boy: You mean, even I can learn magic?

Lilka: Of course you can! For instance, you can pick out a loved one's voice or your own name in a noisy room. That's a kind of magic, too. Get it?

Boy: No, I don't get it.

Lilka: No? Oh... But you will someday. Magic is a power that anyone

can use... And magic can do anything.

---

~~Millennium Puzzle~~

[FLASHBACK:]

[Lilka is on a cube, in a room filled with cubes.  
The place is one big puzzle.]

Lilka: Oh, Sis! What am I supposed to do? I don't know what to do!  
I can't figure it out all alone!!

Lilka's Sister: >Calm down. It'll be OK. Hey, don't cry.  
Can you see the big Switchblock behind you?  
Use your magic on it.

[Lilka stands.]

Lilka's Sister: >It'll be all right. I know you can do it.

[Lilka fires her Fire Rod to the Switchblock 2x.]

Lilka: I can't do it. I won't lie or say anything. I'm no good at it  
like you are, Sis.

Lilka's Sister: >Didn't you fail to control the gate 'cuz you didn't do it  
right, Sis? Try starting over. This time the door should open.

[Lilka fires 6x more.]

Lilka: Open! Come on. Open up!

Lilka's Sister: >..... This time I'll show you a different method.  
It'll be fine. This way is easy.

Lilka: So why didn't you show me this from the start?!

Lilka's Sister: >Well....  
See the small Switchblock just below where you are?

[Lilka goes down, in front of the small Switchblock.]

Lilka's Sister: >Use the same method to get your magic to work.

[Lilka fires on the Switchblock. The platform Lilka is standing onto  
disappears and she falls down. A teleporter appears before her.]

Lilka: Hey, Sis. Look. It worked this time!

Lilka's Sister: >There are 3 Switchblocks left. You need to get all of them.

Lilka: Leave the rest to me. I can manage this.

Lilka's Sister: >Let's review how to handle a Fire Rod. If you press ([]),  
your magic turns to a flame and can fire in front of you.  
Are you OK, Lilka?

Lilka: I know! I'm fine. This is a piece of cake!!

[Lilka was about to touch the teleporter when...]

Lilka's Sister: >Lilka!

Lilka: What is it, Sis?

Lilka's Sister: >Oh nothing. Never mind. Be careful.

[Lilka explores around and fires on another Switchblock.]

Lilka: Sis, what happens when I get it to respond?

Lilka's Sister: >When all the Switchblocks respond, the partially open gate gets reset.

Lilka: I can manage that even with my level of Magic Skills.

Lilka's Sister: >Right. Good luck, Lilka. Two Switchblocks remain.

[Lilka throws fire on another Switchblock.]

Lilka: All right! Only one Switchblock left!

Lilka's Sister: >You did really well.

Lilka: I'm the little sister of the one called the "Eleniak Witch-girl!" This was nothing.

Lilka's Sister: >I'm me and you are you. We are different. You need to believe in yourself more. Lilka, from now on you need to believe in the magic that is yours alone. No matter how hard things get, you'll be able to overcome it with your magic.

Lilka: Huh? What? Finding faults now? Later! Leave it 'til later! If I can do things with my magic, I'll listen to anything!

[Lilka fires the last Switchblock and the gate is gone.]

Lilka: Sis! Sis! Where are you, Sis?

Lilka's Sister: >I can't leave the gate of the Millennium Puzzle like this. Soon, you'll be linked to the world you came from, so don't worry.

Lilka: Sis, you...

Lilka's Sister: >Say, ...mmmfff... p-p-promise... uh, ... un to ... Lilka.

Lilka: I can't hear you, Sis! Sis?

[The whole puzzle vanishes. FLASHBACK ENDS.]

-----  
Lilka: You can do anything with magic if you use it right.

[A man enters the house.]

Boy: Father!

Mother: Oh, darling, what's the matter? Did you come up with a plan?

Father: No, we're stumped. Go figure, eh?

Lilka: I'm sorry. You seem to be bothered by something. I can help if you want. Can you tell me what's wrong?

Father: ...Well, for the past few days... Our peaceful, humble village has been attacked nightly by monsters. The village have not been harmed, but they live in fear of the night. Tonight's meeting was to discuss the monster problem.

Lilka: Let me help, please!

Father: What can a girl like you do?

Boy: Daddy, she knows how to cast magic spells!

Lilka: Just leave everything to me! Your troubles are over!

Boy: You mean they've just begun!

Lilka: No! :-(

[Lilka talks to everyone to find out about the monsters attacking the village.]

@Mother: The Mercs are adventurers who explore ancient ruins and hunt monsters for bounty. They'd be perfect for a job like this.

@Boy: Those scary monsters only attack the wheat fields. At least no one in the village has been harmed so far. But my dad is out patrolling to make sure those monsters don't prey anything.

@Man 1: Those monsters always come from the northeast. The northeast is an unlucky direction. Bad things always come from the northeast. And guess where the granary in Palace Village is. Right. In the northeast part of town.

@Man 2: It was about... yes, exactly a week ago that the village was first attacked. I remember it well because we were busy harvesting the Palace wheat.

@Man 3: We finished harvesting the all-important wheat that the village economy depends on. The granary is chock full of wheat we harvested.

Lilka: OK, let's just sum up what we know, alright? The monsters aren't after the village of the villagers. They are after the wheat harvest. No one has been hurt. The damage is limited to the wheat and the wheat field. Come to think of it, the monsters always appear in the northeast.

Voice: They're back! The monsters! The monsters are attacking!

Lilka: They're after the granary!

[Lilka helps the villagers.]

Lilka: Hurry! Don't panic! Just find someplace safe to hide!

..... I'll take care of the monsters... with my magic!

Lilka: (Young lady, give me a hand!)

[Lilka runs to the monster.]

[BOSS: Boundless Glutton Monster - Olivier]

[Lilka defeats Olivier.]

Villager: W-We did it! We beat them!

Villager: Young lady, you drove them off all by yourself?

Boy: That's amazing! Young lady, you're incredible!  
Wow, your magic is powerful after all!

Lilka: (So, it was your magic, eh?)

Lilka: I said YEAH! "V" for victory, sucka!

[Time passes. Everyone sees Lilka off near the village entrance.]

Village Mayor: I don't know what would have happened if you hadn't come along.  
Thank you very much! Really!

Lilka: No, thank you! You've helped me so much too!

Village Mayor: But, are you really all right with only this?  
We could prepare a better reward.

Lilka: I am in a hurry. Even though you probably have use for my magic.  
That's why I'm so happy to receive the Teleport Gem.

[A woman gives her a Teleport Gem. Lilka raises it.]

Boy: Big Sis, will you come visit me again?

Lilka: Of course! I promise!

Boy: And this time, don't mess up.

Lilka: Yeah.

[Lilka disappears.]

Villager: Oops, my shoelace is...

[A black cat walks by.]

Boy: I wonder if she'll be OK.

-----  
Lilka: I tried to be cool about it, but I might have blown it.  
I don't think I'd have been cursed if I had accepted a bag lunch.  
That reminds me... I still haven't had breakfast yet.  
I'm so hungry! I'm sure it'll be OK! If I get to the Valeria  
home. I'm sure they'll feed me! Now that that's settled,



I'll be fine, just fine! ...at least that's what I thought.

=====

#####  
#[1.02] The Town to the Western Winds #  
#####

[On a cliff, a mysterious girl can be seen looking at a comet from the sky.]

Mysterious Girl (?): The comet has disrupted the heavens.  
I need to do something! I must hurry!

[The sun rises.]

Mysterious Girl (?): Whoa! Whoops! Heaven forbid!

[The Girl puts on a pointed hat and leaves.]

-----

~~Town of Meria~~

[Three boys are heading to a bakery. A woman comes out from inside.]

[The same woman is now on Ashley's room, opening the curtains.]

Ashley: Oh, my eyes! Too bright! Who opened the curtains?

Innkeeper's daughter: It's me, sleepyhead, it's me.

Ashley: Oh, it's only you, Marina. Morning.

[Ashley gets up from bed.]

Marina: I know you're on leave, but you can't sleep all day!

Ashley: I'm confined to quarters, not on leave. Don't you get it?

Marina: Well, from here I don't see any difference!  
Anyway, you have visitors.

Ashley: Visitors? Really? Me? I wonder who it is...

@Marina: Don't keep your friends waiting. Hurry up and go!

@Baker's Wife: Good morning, Ashley. A friend is waiting at the front.  
(This guy has friends?)

[Ashley goes out from the bakery.]

Tony: Hey, Dude! What's up? Thanks for helpin' out the other day.

Ashley: Oh yeah, at the Withered Ruins. How have you been, Tony?

Tony: Excellent, as you can see! But I wouldn't be if you hadn't  
rescued me, Dude! Um...

Ashley: Hi. I'm Ashley. Nice to meet you.

Tony: These two are friends of mine.

Vacant-looking boy: Very pleased to meet you.

[The boy's name is Scott.]

Scott: Thank you for helping our dear friend the other day.  
In my humble opinion, you would seem to be a very good person.  
I am pleased to make your acquaintance.

Boy in native dress: Hello.

[The boy's name is Tim.]

Tim: The 3 of us hang out together, 'cause we're all orphans.  
We're so glad that our dear friend Tony is alright.  
Thank you, Ashley.

Tony: We came here to thank you and to ask you a favor.

Ashley: A favor?

Tony: Yeah... Helping people is your job, right?  
Well, we need your help! We can't do this on our own!

Ashley:  
-> 1. OK, tell me what's going on.

Tony: We need you to catch a cat... Actually, a kitten.

[The cat can be seen on the rooftop of the bakery.]

Tony: This is embarrassing, but... This kitten made off with a  
treasure of ours. It's the kitten up there on the roof.

Scott: In my humble opinion... It looks bad to have this happen to us.  
We find ourselves unable to remedy the situation as the kitten  
is on the roof.

Tim: Frightened by our chasing it, the kitten refuses to descend.  
I am sorry to bother you, but can you do something?

Tony: You gotta help us, Dude! Our pride is at stake here!

@Tony: You gotta help, Dude. You're the only one I can turn to!

@Scott: In my humble opinion... ...since we were unable to retrieve it  
ourselves, we have no shred of honor left.

@Tim: Excuse me... I hate to interrupt your rest, but could you do me  
a favor?

[Ashley goes up the roof, through the ladder in the bakery. He tries to get  
the cat, but it runs away.]

@Man fixing the roof: I'm fixing a hole in the roof. My old lady hates it,  
but it's handy to be able to come and go through the  
roof, I think. Well, that looks fun! How 'bout it,  
sonny? Want me to help you catch that cat?

Ashley: Yes, please help me!

Man fixing the roof: Chase that cat this way again. I have a secret weapon.  
Hee hee! This is no time to be fixing the roof.

[Ashley chases the cat again to where the man fixing the roof is.]

Man fixing the roof: Now! screeech!

[The cat falls into the hole in the roof.]

Man fixing the roof: Yeah! I gotcha! Did you see that? Did you witness my  
amazing skill and timing? The cat must be under here.  
If this is what you want help with, count me in!

[Ashley enters the building where the cat fell.]

Ashley: Gotcha! Alright, now be a good kitty...

[Ashley grabs the mischievous kitten.]

Ashley: This must be the treasure that the kitten took.

[Ashley takes the cat out.]

Tony: Wow, that's great, Dude! Muchas gracias!

Scott: I am so glad. In my humble opinion... We have successfully  
preserved our honor.

Ashley: This is it, right? I got it back!

Tony: Ah, what the heck. Here, you can have it! This is a matter of  
principle. I have it back, so I'm happy. Now I'm giving it to  
you... as a token of my gratitude for getting it back. Take it!

[Ashley receives a Crest Cap.]

Tony: Oh, one more thing...

Tim: Please accept this from me. This is a Medium. It supposedly  
contains the power of a Guardian. Before she died, Mom gave this  
to me as a good luck charm. I want you to have it, Ashley.

Ashley: Are you sure? This must be very special to you.

Tim: It's OK, 'cause I have another one. Please take it... as a token  
of my gratitude for saving Tony.

Ashley: Alright. Thank you, Tim.

[Ashley acquires Grudiev.]

Tim: Equipping characters with a medium boosts their parameters.  
Each Medium has its own "Custom Command", a special battle  
command. The "Custom Command" is added to your battle commands  
and will come in handy. One more thing... Mom said that the  
Medium also had another type of power. But I can't remember what  
it was. Sorry.

Ashley: That's OK, Tim. It's handy enough as it is!

Ashley:

-> 2. Sorry, but I'm busy now.

Tony: Oh. Alright. I guess you have your job to do. That's cool.  
But I still wanna thank you for the other day. Here, take this.

Tim: Please... This is a Medium. It supposedly contains the power of  
a Guardian. Before she died, Mom gave this to me as a good luck  
charm. I want you to have it, Ashley.

Ashley: Are you sure? This must be very special to you.

Tim: It's OK, 'cause I have another one. Please take it... as a token  
of my gratitude for saving Tony.

Ashley: Alright. Thank you, Tim.

[Grudiev acquired.]

Tim: Equipping characters with a medium boosts their parameters.  
Each Medium has its own "Custom Command", a special battle  
command. The "Custom Command" is added to your battle commands  
and will come in handy. One more thing... Mom said that the  
Medium also had another type of power. But I can't remember what  
it was. Sorry.

Ashley: That's OK, Tim. It's handy enough as it is!

[Marina appears.]

Marina: Oh, there you are. I was looking for you Ashley.

Ashley: What is it?

Marina: A musketeer came and said to give this to you.

[Ashley receives a letter. He reads it.]

Marina: Well? What does it say?

Ashley: It says I'm not confined to quarters anymore. And... I've been  
assigned to the special squad that was just formed.

[Some time later, Ashley is in his room, sitting on his bed.]

Ashley: You're in the special squad! Wow, that's great! This is right  
outta the old epics! But do I even deserve this? After all, I  
did get confined to quarters for insubordination.  
I don't get it. I just don't get it. Why would they pick me for  
such an honor? And besides... Why was Marina so angry then?  
I just can't figure it out.

[FLASHBACK:]

Ashley: The new special squad? The one everyone was talking about?  
Hooray! Hooray! Here, read this! The chief recommended me!

[Ashley grabs Marina's hands and shakes it.]

Ashley: Yippee! I did it, Marina! I did it! Alright!

Marina: H-Hey! Stop! Ouch! That hurts, Ashley.

Ashley: I'm celebrating! This is a happy occasion! Aren't you happy, Marina?

[Marina turns away from Ashley.]

Marina: No. Not at all.

Ashley: Hmph...

Marina: This isn't something to jump up and down about!

[Ashley goes in front of Marina.]

Ashley: Marina? What are you so upset about? Why aren't you happy for me? They picked me over a lot of other people, you know.

Marina: Yeah. They did pick you. They picked you for a mission that's even more dangerous than before! How can I be happy about that?

[Marina leaves.]

Ashley: Marina...

[FLASHBACK ENDS.]

Ashley: After that, Marina didn't even say anything to me. We're always together, and sometimes we have fun, but we argue just as much, too. .... What kind of relationship do I have with Marina, anyway?

[The next morning...]

[The townspeople are gathered together near the fountain.]

Woman: Congratulations, Ashley!

Man: You are something else!

Man 2: And get assigned to the new squad AND get the Order of Knighthood... I envy you!

Ashley: Thanks. But to be honest, I still don't believe it myself.

Man 2: Don't sound so wishy-washy! You're the defender of this town now! So shape up, soldier!

Ashley: Ha ha ha.

Man: Well, anyway, I wonder what's keeping Marina. And here we are, gathered for a big send-off for Ashley. Where could she be?

Ashley: .....

Man 2: I think it's time to leave for the conferment ceremony. It's at the Sword Cathedral, located at the foot of a mountain

far to the northeast. Be careful out there. The damage from monsters has been increasing lately.

Ashley: Don't worry. After all, fighting monsters is my job.

Man 2: Yes, you're right!

Ashley: Well, I'll be on my way.

[Ashley was about to leave the village when Marina appears.]

Ashley: Marina! I'm so glad you came!

Marina: Me, too. I'm sorry about yesterday. I'm happy for you. I don't know why I said those things.

Ashley: It's OK. Anyway, I have to be going now.

Marina: You're coming right back?

Ashley: Sure. I'll come right back after the ceremony. I promise.

Marina: We'll be waiting for you with a big feast for dinner.

Ashley: Good! I can't wait. Bye. See you soon!

Marina: Take care!

=====

```
#####  
#[1.03] New Knight Squad Ceremony #  
#####
```

[Ashley enters the cathedral.]

~~Sword Cathedral~~

--New Knight Squad Ceremony--

A squad of knights trained in guerilla tactics  
was established to fend off terrorists...  
and increasingly strong, brutal, and fearsome monsters  
as well as an unstable world.

The Knight squad organized as a backup for Meria Boule has...  
The advantage of independent authority allowing it to respond  
rapidly to a variety of situations.

Agile Remote Mission Squad (ARMS)

An Agile  
Remote  
Mission  
Squad  
Short for ...ARMS.

Commander: The significance of ARMS' existence lies therein.  
I am counting on your actions and efforts! Dismissed!

[Two men carries a sword embedded on a rock. They take it to the stage.]

People: Hey, isn't that...

People: Yeah, they say it's essential to a formal knight ceremony.

People: But, it's the first time I've seen it.

Man: Those just knighted-- Blessings will be conferred upon you by the <Sword Magess>. Try to draw the Guardian Blade, Argetlahm. which banished the old blaze. He who thinks he is no hero, go ahead and draw the sword. Here, <Sword Magess>... show us the birth of a new hero.

[The young men line up to try and draw the Guardian Blade.]

Young Man: You're wasting my time. There's no way...

Ashley: What'd you say?

Young Man: Since this ceremony first started, 100 or so years ago, no one has ever drawn the sword. Do you understand what this means? It means it's setup from the beginning so it can't be drawn. As a ceremony, and as a symbol of power, the sword is meaningless.

Ashley: That may be so. But doesn't someone have to become the hero? It's not impossible that it's me. Ever since I was little, I have looked up to the heroes who protected everyone. Is that so strange?

Young Man: The fact that I'm embarrassed means I've really matured. Who cares? It's your turn.

[Ashley goes in front to try and pull Argetlahm. The screen goes white.]

- - - - -

Once, there was a Blaze of Disaster that stained Filgaia with its crimson flames...

The flames from the earth scorched the heavens.  
The blazing whirlwinds threatened the planet's very future.  
Mankind clung to their only hope of surviving this life-or-death crisis...

The <Sword Magess>!

Born as a daughter of a nameless petty noblewoman,  
she was drawn to the call of...  
...the Guardian Blade named "Argetlahm."

With no way to fight, the people cast their hopes on  
the Magess' sword and believed in the future.

The night of the seventh day after obtaining the sword --  
wrapped in a torrent of light, the <Magess> vanished from Filgaia  
together with the Blaze of Disaster.  
leaving behind Argetlahm plunged deep in the earth.

-- Time passed

The Guardian Blade "Argetlahm" began to be treated as a symbol of power.  
The battle of the <Sword Magess> remained in the hearts of the people  
as a familiar, ubiquitous legend.

But the people had no idea that their familiar legends in the past would  
have meaning in the present...  
--and in the future.

- - - - -

[Some time later, in the Sword Cathedral's dining hall,  
Ashley is chatting with a man.]

Man: Wow, how pompous. Don't do anything to encourage it.

Ashley: Ha. Ha. Ha. Even I thought for a second that it might come out.

Man: In the end, no one was able to get the Argetlahm, the sword, out.

Ashley: Everything's fine like this. The fact that the sword could be retrieved means there's some reason for it, right?

Man: What do you mean?

Ashley: Whoever retrieves the sword is the "hero," right?  
A "hero" suddenly appearing means that there will be some disturbance needing a "hero."

Man: You sure have an interesting way of thinking.  
Well, but it could be true.

Ashley: Everything's fine like this. No one wants war.

@Man: Did you know that all the arms we carry are manufactured in Guild Galad? The country has a resource called a "Fossil" and uses it to develop Mechanical Techniques.

@Man 2: The ARMS emblem being designed now has a watchdog motif.  
There's something not right. Feels like "The National Dog".  
What do you think?

@Man 3: It looks like our next mission has not been officially determined yet. But it won't be long before some booming voice calls for us. I mean, it's almost guaranteed we'll be assigned to the front line.

@Man 4: It's not possible that matter suddenly develops out of nothing without a reason. But the monsters just keep multiplying.  
Where in the world are they all coming from?

@Man 5: I'm so nervous. My first appearance. I wish my mom back home could see me now.

@Man 6: It looks like we're a part of the Special Forces. In other words, we're being assigned to the most dangerous front.  
I wonder how many of us will still be alive 6 months from now.

@Man 7: Taking on this job, I sure feel sorry for guys with girlfriends.  
For me, ever since I was born, I never managed such troublesome things! So what about you?



@Man 8: We're counting on you, Best luck to you all.

@Man 9: For some reason, I'm nervous. There's no reason why I should be nervous but...

@Man 10: Since ARMS emphasizes the soldiers' skills, personal backgrounds aren't screened. Look around you. Aren't there a lot of unruly looking guys here?

Commander: Hey, are you having fun yet, Ashley?

Ashley: Yes, Commander!

Commander: If you go a bit wild, I'll look the other way today. You'll be busy enough soon. Have fun wild you can. But I don't want to hear any complaints later that "we never get days off."

Ashley: I understand, Sir.

Commander: We're affiliated with Meria Boule, but it won't stay that way forever. The new reforms go beyond national boundaries to international peace-keeping activities. We have to make sure that ARMS isn't involved in anything shameful.

Ashley: Yes, Sir!

Commander: "Yes, Sir?" You're the one I'm most worried about!

Ashley: Sor...Sorry.

Commander: Oh, never mind. More importantly, there's a lot of good food here. Eat and enjoy yourself today. Remember, tomorrow it's back to the front.

Ashley: Roger!

[The place starts shaking.]

Man: Hey, what's that?

[A black wave can be seen in the wall.]

Man 1: Ooooo! Graaaaaaaaaaaah!

[The man transforms into a monster. More follows.]

Man 2: Gaah! Ga! Ga! Ga!

Man 3: Geeeee, graaaaah!

Man 4: What kind of a joke is this, huh!?

Man 5: Orders, please. Someone, please give us orders!

Commander: Calm down! First things first-- we have to get out of here! We're going to blast through the front gate.

[The men who have not turned into monsters yet try to escape.  
The monsters chase for them.]

[They continue to run away but they are stopped by a locked door.]

Man: Hey, hey.

[The monsters reach them. More and more of them transform to monsters.]

Ashley: Ooaaaaahhhhh.

[Ashley can be seen running in some dimension.]

Ashley: What? What is it? What's going on? I don't like it!  
I don't want to be here! I want to go home!

Inner Voice: If that's the case, you have to survive. Tear the others apart  
and if you're the last one standing, there's no problem.

Ashley: I can't possibly do that. Besides, that monster was originally  
human. He was a friend!

Inner Voice: Is it fear? Or is it just hesitation? All right.  
Wipe them all out. I will grant you "power".

[Ashley appears to be back in Sword Cathedral surrounded by monsters.]

Ashley: !! Who, who are you? Who speaks in my heart?

Inner voice: Me? "I" am "You." Soon I'll be "me." It'll be none other than  
"You."

Ashley: Ah! Aaaaaaaaah! Sor, Sorry, Marina!

[Ashley becomes a monster himself. The other monsters attack him.  
He defeats them.]

Ashley: Whooo, Graaah..... AM...I...ABLE...TO...FIGHT?

[Ashley defeats more of the monsters. He finds a mirror in the hall.]

Ashley: THESE HANDS, THESE LEGS, AND THIS BODY. IS... THIS... ME?  
CAN'T I CHANGE BACK? IS IT INEVITABLE THAT MY BODY WILL TURN TO  
DUST LIKE THAT MONSTER'S BODY? WILL I EVER GO HOME AGAIN?

[Ashley proceeds north, to the room where Argetlahm is.  
He grabs the sword and pulls it. He can now be seen in some dimension,  
where a woman is.]

Woman of the Light: What is your wish?

Ashley: I have to get home. I promised.

Woman of the Light: Is that an important promise?

Ashley: .....

[The Woman of the Light presents Argetlahm to him.]

Woman of the light: ..... I thought It'd be fine if no one who could  
use the sword ever showed again. I believed it was enough  
that I alone suffered. If you are ready to take

responsibility for it all. If you're willing to risk all to fulfill your promise, grab the sword, Argetlahm.

Ashley: I made a promise, a foolish promise...  
But for me, it's a promise I have to keep.

[Ashley grabs the sword, he is then surrounded by light and appears back in the Sword Cathedral. He returns to his original appearance.]

Ashley: Ahhhhh...Mmmm...Oooooo.

[Footsteps can be heard.]

Ashley: Who are you?

[A man on crutches walks toward him.]

Man on Crutches: I'm Irving. Irving Vold Valeria!  
A man bearing a cross called you!!

Irving: Take my hand. This bond is the only hope that continues from the past into the future. In other words, our meeting here on earth is "Fate" itself!

[Irving presents his hand to Ashley but he faints.]

-----  
[Meanwhile, a man and a woman are on a cliff above the Cathedral.]

Large Majestic Warrior: Demon Summoning-- For the experiment to go so well...

Silver-Haired Key User: What a frightening power! Do we really have to use this power?

Large Majestic Warrior: We are trying to change history. For that, we need a potent power. It's the greatest power known!

Silver-Haired Key User: .....

Large Majestic Warrior: What are you thinking, Caina?

Caina: What is he planning, making contact with the parallel universe? Did he urge the Demon Summoning on us? I can't believe that man is sympathetic to our ideals.

Large Majestic Warrior: You don't believe in these powers?

Caina: The only thing I believe in is Sir Vinsfeld himself.

Vinsfeld: I'm counting on your work, Caina.

=====  
#####  
#[1.04] The Valeria Chateau #  
#####

Ashley: What's happening to me... I'm burning up... Something's rushing through me... My body's numb, but my senses feel strangely sharp.

I feel something strange inside. I... I... I am...

Inner Voice: You... are yourself. But not for long... You will soon evolve from you... into me. The strangest you feel inside you... It is the scar of your former self crying out in pain as you begin to evolve into... me.

Ashley: No! I'm scared... What do I do!? I don't understand... How can I lose myself?! What does that mean?! Who... Who... Who am I?

Inner Voice: Destroy...

Ashley: .....!

Inner Voice: Destroy...

Ashley: Destroy what?

Inner Voice: Destroy it!!

Ashley: Destroy... myself!?

-----  
~~Town of Meria~~

[Ashley is in his room, in the bakery.]

Ashley: I haven't changed at all. My life hasn't changed at all.

[Marina enters.]

Ashley: Marina...

Marina: You had me worried! I thought you would never wake up again...

[Ashley gets up from bed.]

Ashley: I'm alright! Look, I'm all better now, see?

Marina: Don't overexert yourself. The attack was only a week ago.

Ashley: Attack? What attack?

Marina: Terrorists attacked the ceremony celebrating the new squad.

Ashley: (They're saying it was a terrorist attack? No, it wasn't! It...)

Marina: I'll tell Auntie you're awake.

Ashley: Marina, wait!

Marina: What? What's wrong?

Ashley: Am I... I'm still me, right?

Marina: ..... Huh? Of course you are, Ashley. Who else could you be?

Ashley: Yeah, you're right. Forget what I said.

[Marina goes down and Ashley follows.]

Baker's wife: Are you sure you're alright?

Ashley: Yeah. I'm sorry if I worried you.

Baker's Wife: A nobleman named Sir Valeria carried you back here.  
You should go thank him when you feel better.

Ashley: (Valeria... That's right! I remember meeting a man named  
Valeria. And I... Damn! I can only remember bits and pieces...  
Why? What happened to me?)

Marina: Ashley...

Ashley: Oh, I'm sorry. It's nothing. I was just thinking out loud.

Marina: You were the only one who survived the attack.  
Don't forget to thank Sir Valeria. It's the mature thing to do.

Ashley: OK. I will.

[Ashley leaves the bakery. Outside, Lilka is watching through the window.  
She faints and Ashley comes to her aid.]

Ashley: Hey, you there! What's wrong with you?

Lilka: H-Help!

Ashley: Hey, you! Settle down!

[Lilka's stomach grumbles. Ashley takes her inside.]

Ashley: So you're a user of magic, a Crest Sorceress?

Lilka: I goofed with a Teleport Gem and wound up in the wrong spot.  
I ran out of gems and money to boot. So I walked and walked and  
made it to this town.

Baker's wife: Well, what about food? What have you been eating?

Lilka: Actually, I haven't been. I smelled your freshly baked bread  
and it drew me here.

[Lilka gazes at the bread display.]

Marina: Um, Auntie, could we...

Baker's wife: Say no more. Young lady, take as much of our bread as you can  
carry.

Lilka: You mean... No, I couldn't...

Baker's wife: Now, don't be shy. Come on, tell me which kind you like.

Lilka: Thanks so much! I'll try a jelly roll, please!

Baker's wife: How many would you like?

Lilka: Just one, ma'am.

[Lilka stomach acts up again.]

Lilka: Actually, casting spells takes a lot of energy.  
So, I get hungry a LITTLE more quickly than other people.

Baker's wife: How many do you want?

Lilka: Um... Five jelly rolls, please. I really appreciate this!

[They give Lilka the bread and she eats it.  
Lilka also tells them her story.]

Ashley: So you have to go to the Valeria household, too?

[Lilka finishes the bread.]

Lilka: What a coincidence, huh? Hey, I know! Let me take you there to  
thank you for the jelly rolls!

Ashley: Take me there? You don't even look like you know the way.

Lilka: Well, um, actually... I know roughly where it is!  
So we can look together! OK? OK?

Ashley: Yeah, I guess so.

Lilka: Omigosh! Wait! I haven't introduced myself yet!  
My name is Lilka. Lilka Eleniak.  
Pleased to make your acquaintance!

Ashley: And I'm Ashley. The pleasure's all mine!

[Ashley and Lilka set out.]

-----  
~~Valeria Chateau~~

[A man welcomes them.]

Ashley: Um... I would like to meet with Mr. Valeria.

Man: I'm sorry, but is he expecting you?

Ashley: No, not really...

Man: In that case, can I ask you to wait in the parlor on the 3rd  
floor?

Ashley: I would be happy to.

Man: Please let me show you the way.

[They walk along.]

Lilka: (I have an invitation letter...)

Ashley: (Why didn't you say that sooner?)

Lilka: (Sorry...)

[In the parlor...]

Lilka: I can't help but get nervous.

Ashley: I hate waiting like this.

Lilka: I bet we'll have to have good manners and everything.

[Irving enters and goes in front of them.]

Irving: Sorry to keep you waiting. There was something I had to finish... No, don't get up. Let me introduce myself... I am Irving... Irving Vold Valeria, Lord of the House of Valeria.

Ashley: ... I am, um...

Irving: Ashley Winchester, the sole survivor of the destroyed special squad. And the lovely lady is... the famed Eleniak Witch-Girl, perhaps?

[Lilka looks down.]

Irving: Well, Ashley, what would you like to know most? Everyone thinks that ARMS was disbanded because of what happened at the ceremony.

Ashley: But actually...

Irving: Our aim was not simply to prevent terrorism, as we announced. Actually, it was a magnificent experiment in Demon Summoning.

Ashley: 'Demon Summoning'...?

Irving: A magic ritual to bring beings from a parallel universe into ours.

Ashley: You mean you brought us there for that?

Irving: ..... Yes, and ARMS was destroyed, but that wasn't the end of everything. You miraculously survived, and control of ARMS passed to the House of Valeria. I'm saying that ARMS is being reborn under the Valerias for a different purpose. The new ARMS will belong to no nation, but will be an autonomous fighting force! Ashley Winchester, you were selected by ARMS.

Ashley: I was...

[A woman enters the room. Ashley thought she was the "Woman of the Light" for a second. She places a drink for Ashley and Lilka.]

Irving's sister: ... Here you are.

Irving: Is something wrong with my sister?

Ashley: No... ...nothing.

Irving: These two are guests of mine. You could at least greet them.

[The woman's name is Altaecia. She leaves the room.]

Ashley: Let me finish... The old ARMS was destroyed, so ... is the new ARMS made up of just me?

Irving: No, not just you. You are the third member. We must be ready for anything, so we need a Crest Sorcerer. Which is why I asked for help from the famous Eleniak Witch-Girl.

Ashley: This girl too!?

Lilka: But I, I... My name is Lilka Eleniak. The Eleniak Witch-Girl is my older sister. She got hurt in an experiment with a magical artifact and couldn't come. ... So, I came instead.

Lilka: I guess I won't be of any use... It has to be my sister, right? I would like to use my magic to be of use to somebody, too... I want to be like my sister. Of course, my magic isn't as good as hers. I was only at about the middle of my class in Magic School. I sort of lack confidence... Do you think... you could use me?

Irving: Alright. I'm sure you'll be fine. You probably know this already but... this is a very serious business. Understand?

Lilka: Yes! Thank you very much. I still have a long way to go, but someday I'll be just like my sister! I'm so glad. I thought all men who are prettier than women were cold. Irving, you aren't that way at all. You are actually very nice.

Irving: ... Nice? Oh really?  
I don't think I'm quite as nice as you say, Lilka.

Lilka: ... Really? But I'm not about to deny that I am pretty.

Irving: I've never thought so, but that's what I've been always told. These days I'm beginning to think maybe it's really the case. Let me give you your first mission as ARMS. Oh, but wait... Our preparations will take a while longer. Wait in the Chateau for our preparations to be complete. Then you'll get the assignment.

[Lilka and Ashley explore the Chateau.]

@Altaecia: It's so rare that my brother agrees to see visitors. He has a bad habit of taking everything upon himself. But no one has the strength to do everything all alone. Yet everyone has the strength to help others... Isn't it ironic?

[In the infirmary...]

@Linda: D-Don't worry! My hand isn't sh-shaking that much! I'm Linda. I'm k-kinda new at this, so go easy on me, OK?

@Momo: What a nice, young body. I'm Momo. As you can see, I'm a nurse.

[They step on a "restricted area".]



Childish woman: Wait... you can't go in there. It's a restricted area.

Calm woman: This area is for emergency use only. It is off limits. Sorry.

Childish woman: Don't tell anyone. But we're skipping work right now.

Calm woman: You be quiet, now! .....  
Excuse me, but are you looking for someone?

Ashley: Umm... yes. I'm looking for Irving.

Childish woman: I think I saw him headed for his room just now.

Ashley: Thank you. I'll go and see.

[Ashley and Lilka go to Irving's room.]

Irving: I'll tell you about the mission. Are your preparations complete?

Ashley: I'm ready.

Irving: We'll have you come along on our first mission!  
Your first mission is to join up with another ARMS member.

Lilka: Another comrade? Who could that be?

Ashley: Where do we meet up?

Irving: I will show you. The other party already knows you're coming.  
All you have to do is go there and meet up.

Ashley: ... Understood.

Irving: Oh, Ashley. Could I see your weapon?

Ashley: My weapon?

[Irving grabs Ashley's weapon.]

Irving: We expect there to be fighting at the meeting point.  
We want you to be prepared for anything.  
... You seem to be keeping this in good shape...

[Irving fires Ashley's ARM and throws it back to Ashley.  
The guards come in.]

Guard: What was that shot?! What happened?!

Irving: This man is a traitor! Arrest the treasonous Ashley!  
Lilka, here are your orders. You will escort the prisoner  
Ashley! Escort him to... 'the Prison Island of Illsveil!'

=====

#####  
#[1.05] Illsveil Prison Paradise #  
#####

[Inside the Prisoner Convoy Vessel, Ashley is locked behind bars.]

Ashley: Shoot! Why'd this happen to me? Open up! Let me out of here!  
I didn't do anything! If you check it out, I'd be cleared!

Guard: Everyone says they're innocent when they hear they're being sent  
to Illsveil. That's because it's an isolated prison island.  
Once you go in, you never come out alive.

[The Guard leaves.  
Lilka enters.]

Lilka: Ashley!

Ashley: From the beginning, he planned to trick me.

Lilka: Don't worry. When we get to Illsveil Prison, I'll prove your  
innocence. You need to be patient until then.

Ashley: .....

[The Guard returns.]

Guard: Hey, almost there. Now, get out! Feast your eyes on the lovely  
Illsveil Prison.

-----  
~~Illsveil Prison~~

Warden: To you hardened criminals so despised by the public...  
Welcome to Illsveil Prison. As the 1st convict here, I'm now  
ruler of this independent domain! In other words, I'm the  
warden.

Warden: As you criminals are able to see... Illsveil is an isolated  
prison island! In other words, it's a natural fort.  
While it wasn't terribly hard for you convicts to get here,  
it's impossible for you to get out alive! Once you're used to  
it, life here isn't too bad. Being on the outside isn't so hot.

Warden: Here you trouble only useless fools. How about spending  
your remaining years enjoying yourself here? The longer you are  
here, the better your life will be. I've got 214 years left on  
my sentence! Hope you don't have fantasies of escaping yet.  
And of course, if you win my favor, becoming Prison Warden isn't  
a dream. The fact that this island is an independent domain  
stems from that very fact! Ha. Ha. Ha. Ha. Ha.

[Ashley gets locked behind bars.]

Lilka: Anyway, I need to go explain everything to Warden Dokyun.  
Let me take care of it. You should just stay put and lay low.  
It's best to take things slow.

Ashley: So you're used to stuff like this?

Lilka: Well, sort of! When I was little, I pulled a lot of pranks and  
got locked in the closet for it.

Ashley: (Wow, that's too bad...) Regardless, we were disarmed and now  
I have no weapon. I have no intention of doing anything drastic.

Lilka: But... How do I explain it? If I really wanted, I could use my magic to blast through in a second.

[An explosion can be heard.]

Lilka: No, no. It's not me! But we can use this. Definitely! I'll retrieve your confiscated weapons.

Ashley: "Lay low and be patient" she says.

Lilka: Adapt to your circumstances... Hm!

Ashley: Lilka! Thanks for earlier. You tried to cheer me up, right? ..... Be careful.

Lilka: OK!

@Ashley: Don't overdo it. Hey, come over here. It's first aid I learned with the musketeers. Even I can help out.

[Lilka explores the prison and finds the equipment inside a locker.]

Lilka: I bet this is the confiscated equipment. What? What? But did Ashley use a Mechanical Glove like this? Oh, who cares!? I'll take it all and something will work!

[Lilka takes the weapons. She also acquires a Jail Card.]

[Lilka goes back to Ashley.]

@Ashley: With that Jail Card, you should be able to open the lock! But before that... Thanks, Lilka hand me my equipment.

[Lilka opens the lock.]

Lilka: Hey, sorry to keep you waiting. Here, take this.

Ashley: Wow, you brought so much. These mechanical gloves are Might Gloves, right? Well, they aren't mine.

Lilka: I didn't understand, so what could I have done? Anyway, here. Put this on. Hurry. We need to get out of here quickly.

Ashley: Ok. Great job. Don't look over here.

Lilka: Oh, come on!

[Lilka turns around while Ashley changes.]

Lilka: That noise we heard earlier was a mass jailbreak. It seems that all the convicts here escaped at once.

Ashley: A mass jailbreak! Is that possible? Preparations done! We're off!

[Ashley and Lilka move along, they find a prisoner on another floor. They open his cage.]

Ashley: Aren't you going to run away?

Prisoner: ..... Were you sent by Irving?

Ashley: What?

Prisoner: I'm asking you, were you sent by Irving?

Ashley: Do you know Irving?

Prisoner: ..... We're not communicating well here, but it has to be you guys.

Ashley: How can you say that with certainty?

Prisoner: You've got such a babyface for someone locked up in here.

Ashley: Uh, thanks.

Prisoner: Did I say something to offend you? Those Might Gloves are mine. Could you hand them over? There's no time, right?

[Ashley hands over his equipment.]

Ashley: Who the heck are you?

Prisoner: Death Row Inmate No. 666, Brad Evans. I'm one of the ARMS members chosen by Irving. Let's go.

[The party moves along.

On their way, they find the Warden, guarding the exit.]

Warden: Death Row Inmate No. 666! I can't believe it! Even you're thinking of escaping this "paradise!"

Brad: Sorry, Warden. I'm more at home on the "battlefield" than in "paradise." Thanks for everything.

Warden: It's way out of hand. You've given me no choice! Arrest them! Arrest them! And after that, death! Death!

Brad: I can't keep up with you!

Warden: Instead of getting me to say cruel things, I should do it myself! GAO...NIM, come here! Go catch my valuable little convicts.

[BOSS: Escapee Capture Robot - GAONIM]

[The party defeats the Robot.]

[The party exits and leaves the Warden behind.]

Warden: Ahhh! To say I'm stupid is a major insult!

[The Warden fires randomly.]

Warden: Whoa!

Guy with Glasses: No, no! That's not right!

Warden: Who?!

Guy with Glasses: This ridiculous handling of things isn't right at all.

[The screen goes black. A shot can be heard.]

Guy with Glasses: This ridiculous handling is... You understand now?

---

Brad: Let's hurry! This way!

Ashley: This way? Where do you plan on going?

Brad: The boat docks. Haven't you heard of the plan?

Lilka: We haven't been told anything.

[The party moves along. They see Irving is waiting for them.]

Irving: I waited a bit but... Looks like we've finally been able to meet safely.

Ashley: This is... "Everything is going according to your plan."  
Is that what you were hoping?

Irving: Well, there were some changes. I don't think anyone would object if I said that getting Brad out of Illsveil was a success. What was my rationale like as the Chief?

[Ashley hits Irving.]

Ashley: As the one oversees other people, the first thing you... need to do for the people is trust your team!  
I won't permit you to move us around like pawns ever again!

Irving: Next time I'll keep that in mind.  
Would you mind handing me my crutches?  
I can hardly walk without them.

[Ashley hands him his crutches.]

Lilka: Hey, what is it?

Brad: Was the inmate insurrection part of the plan as well?  
Or was that merely a coincidence?

Lilka: How would I know that?

Brad: Well, actually...

[Meanwhile, on the top of Illsveil Prison...]

Guy with Glasses: Besides us, who else has business here in Illsveil?

[Below, a man is surrounded by inmates.]

Inmate: Are we really going to get to say sayonara to this hell?

One-Eyed Giant: Yep, and, with the added bonus of re-employment.

Guy with Glasses: It doesn't seem adequate, but I'll let it go.  
Time to withdraw!

-----  
#####  
#[1.06] Re-opening the Trade Route - Under Traffic and Damzen #  
#####

[Inside Valeria Chateau's parlor...]

Lilka: What's wrong?

Ashley: Hmm? Ahh...

[Irving enters the room.]

Irving: Now we have all three members selected for operations.  
Now ARMS can finally begin to fulfill its true mission!

Lilka: "True mission?"

Irving: Yes! The threat is almost upon us! Disasters on a worldwide  
scale that only you can stand against! That is why ARMS was  
created!

Brad: Why would you put a prisoner like me in ARMS?  
I'd love to hear your explanation...

Irving: Simply put, it's your superior fighting ability.  
Brad Evans, Hero of the Slayheim Liberation Army --  
I'm expecting great things of you.

Brad: If I did try something, what would happen?

Irving: I have prepared for that.  
... Kanda Roestra Amanthos ...

Brad: ... What...? Those words...

Irving: The release code for 'Gias', the mini-bomb embedded in your neck.  
If you decide to try something... Or, if you try to take 'Gias'  
off of your neck: "Boom!"

Brad: You have thought of everything. So this is a dog collar that  
turns me into your little chess piece to control, is it?  
Even the insignia looks like a dog-collar.

[Screen shows the ARMS insignia in the room.]

Irving: "Guard-dog of Law and Order". Is that what I am now?  
Exactly. But since we serve no one country, we will never  
become the pawn of a country. Too bad.

Brad: A band of dotards, children, and escaped prisoners?  
We are more like stray dogs than your "pawn of a country."

Ashley: (The stray dogs of ARMS...)

[Something rings. Irving answers.]

Irving: It's me... .. Is that you, Kate?  
... Ok, I see. ... We'll have them check it out...

Irving: Now for your new mission. A cave-in has occurred in the  
underground trade route called Under Traffic south of here.  
The closing of the trade route is harming people's livelihood!  
You must help them!

Lilka: I thought our missions would be a little more important.  
I feel more like a bureaucrat than a soldier.

Irving: It IS a fine mission, Lilka! Our purpose is to aid people.

[Brad leaves the room. Lilka waits for Ashley.]

Ashley: Sorry about what happened before.

Irving: Don't worry about it. I guess I was a little out of line.  
If you want to make it up to me, take this.

[Irving goes in front of Ashley.]

Ashley: What is this?

Irving: It is a portable communicator. Select the new menu item "Call"  
to open up a direct line to us here. I hope you make us of it.

Ashley: Thanks.

Lilka: Let's go, Ashley!

@Irving: The Under Traffic is a tunnel south of the Chateau.  
It serves as a trade route. Other cave-ins could occur, so be  
careful there.

@Altaecia: Since his injury, my brother has longed for power intently.  
It's as if he's trying to support not just own body, but the  
world itself. But can our beloved Filgaia be supported by any  
one person? Please help my brother! You are strong, unlike  
me... Nearly as strong as my brother!

<Call Menu [Inside the Chateau]>

>Buzz... Hiss... (Radio Static)

\*Clever jamming has rendered the communicators inoperable.

[The party leaves the Chateau.]

<Call Menu>

Irving: >The Under Traffic is located south of Valeria Chateau.  
Exercise extreme caution as more cave-ins occur.

-----  
~~Under Traffic~~

<Call Menu>

Irving: >How is Under Traffic? Call in if you find out anything.

[The party explores Under Traffic. They find a man on the floor.]

Ashley: Someone has collapsed!

Lilka: We've got to help him!

Peddler: Ooooo, ouuu.

Brad: He'll be OK. Nothing life-threatening.

Ashley: Can't leave him as is. Can you move him?

Brad: I can't do anything drastic, but I'll give it a shot.

Ashley: Both the Town of Meria and Veleria Chateau are too far away.  
What should we do?

[The communicator rings.]

Ashley: What?! What the heck happened?!

Lilka: Isn't that the communicator we just got from Irving?

Irving: >It's me. Give me a status report.

Ashley: Ashley here. There's been a cave-in, but I think he will be OK  
with our help.

Irving: >You said "he". What's going on?

Ashley: We found a traveling salesman who was trapped by the cave-in.  
But from here it's too far to the Valeria Chateau or to the Town  
of Meria. And yet, we can't just leave him here.

Irving: >These communicators have a tracer feature. Hold on a sec...  
..... Good. You're near an exit that leads south through  
Under Traffic. From there, go south east to Damzen, an old  
mining town at the base of the mountain. It's a lot closer than  
Valeria Chateau or the Town of Meria. I want you to take the  
injured man there. Can you do it, Ashley?

Ashley: Roger. I'll do my best, sir.

Ashley: Hang in there just a little longer!

Lilka: To Damzen City from here it's southeast. Let's hurry!

[The party exits Under Traffic.]

-----  
~~Damzen City~~

<Call Menu>

Irving: >How is the wounded man doing? Get him to a hospital quickly!



[A stange woman with a pointy hat can be found under the shade in Damzen.  
Ashley talks to the woman.]

Strange Woman in Costume: At last we meet. You must know that the comets  
foreboding ill have divided Heaven and Earth. With the passage  
of time comes a fragment of eternal time.  
It exists within you, too.

Ashley: ???

[Brad talks to the woman.]

Strange Woman in Costume: Ohh! You have the perfect face for it! The  
perfect fighting machine, ready to meet and overcome any  
obstacle! Just perfect to back up Ashley, who sometimes lacks  
in bravery...

[Lilka talks to the woman.]

Strange Woman in Costume: So a cute girl like you is in league with Ashley.  
till, you might want to do something about your appearance.  
Shall I aid you?

[In Damzen's Clinic...]

Doctor: What's this? An emergency?!

Lilka: Yes, it's an emergency! Please help!

[The Doctor checks the injured peddler. After a while...]

Doctor: Well, that's about all I can do. It's boring...Damzen's at the  
base of a mine, so I set broken bones all the time. Next time I  
hope I get a patient I can get more excited about treating.

Patient: Ha ha ha ha ha ha..... Oh...Sorry 'bout that...It's just a  
broken finger, it seems... Thank you so much for helping me.  
I don't know what would've happened if you hadn't come along.

Lilka: It's OK. We were happy to help. Good thing we found you after  
the cave-in, though.

Patient: Which was definitely caused on purpose by somebody, it seems to  
me...

Lilka: What do you mean?

Patient: I swear I heard the sound of gunpowder exploding right before  
the roof came down. Also, I heard human voices.  
I'm almost sure of it.

Brad: That cave-in was in just the right place to seal off the  
entrance. It could be part of someone's plan...

Lilka: Hey, Ashley, that beeping just a couple minutes ago...  
Try contacting Irving on the communicator.

Ashley: Hmm? Oh...OK.

@Patient: If that cave-in was someone's fault, it can't be forgiven.

@Doctor: I like it when patients let me do as I please...

@Lilka: Irving will determine our next course of action.

[Ashley contacts the Valeria Chateau.]

Ashley: It's me! Um... Valeria Chateau, come in.

Calm female voice: >Roger, this is Valeria Chateau.

Ashley: Whoa! Hey, who's this?

Childish female voice: >Gosh, don't scare me like that!

Ashley: Oh, brother...

Irving: >I'm sorry if I frightened you.

Ashley: Who on earth were they?

Irving: >Those were Kate and Amy. They are my operators.

Calm female voice: >Hello. This is Kate. Pleased to meet you.

Childish female voice: >Hiya! I'm Amy! Together we're A&K!  
Pleased ta meetcha!

Ashley: Uh, likewise, I'm sure.

Irving: >They're telepaths. Contact via Emphatite would be impossible...  
without them. They will be helping you from now on.  
...Now, what did you want anyway?

Ashley: Oh, yeah. You know the Under Traffic incident?  
It was no accident.

Irving: >It was intentional?

Ashley: It sure looks that way. Irving, what should we do?

Irving: >I want you to continue your search in the field.

Ashley: Roger.

[Ashley ends the call.]

Ashley: The Under Traffic cave-in might have been intentional.  
There might be something in this town that can help us find out.  
Let's get started quick!

[Ashley talks to the townspeople in search for info.  
Inside one of houses...]

@Man: Those strangers just came and broke into the Tower!  
Unbelievable!

@Woman: I'm sorry, but would you please listen to what the people of my  
family have to say?

@Gramps: If someone's up to no good, you should take care of 'em right away! Yeah, yeah...

@Man: Our family runs the Telepath Tower. Strange people have broken into it! Ever since they came, monsters have been appearing there. We can't even approach it! Who are those people? It was four people, and they seemed very dangerous. I would be careful of them if I were you...

[Ashley contacts Irving.]

Irving: >It's me. What's your status?

Ashley: We've found out two things. One, in Damzen City we found out about a suspicious group. Two, they got into some sort of broadcasting tower, called "Telepath Tower." They may be involved in the cave-ins.

Irving: >Those incidents could be the work of a single group. I want you to tail that group. Telepath Tower is vital. Without it, even these communicators will be useless.

Ashley: Understood. We will head for Telepath Tower.

@Gramps: S of Damzen is a broadcast tower called the Telepath Tower. My family's tended it for generations. Actually... Strange people are loitering about there even now. It was my daughter's husband who found them, nut he didn't tell us about them. Why not I'll never know!

@Woman: Our family has tended the Telepath Tower at the foot of these mountains for generations. What'll we do now? I hope nothing bad comes of it.

@Man: The Telepath Tower is a broadcast tower that uses Emphatite to create communication waves. I don't know what they intend to do there, but I doubt it's anything good. Isn't it scary?

=====

```
#####  
#[1.07] Telepath Tower to Mt. Chug-Chug #  
#####
```

~~Telepath Tower~~

[The "Telepath Tower" is a network system that uses Emphatite for telepathic communication.]

[The party reaches the top of the tower. They examine the room. Then they stand in the center of it, looking at a big crystal.]

Ashley: What's this?

Brad: It's an amplifier for something... probably for this huge equipment.

Ashley: It looks like it was put on later. Maybe that "Shady-looking guy"...

Lilka: Hey, hey... It's starting up! Isn't this a bit dangerous?

Ashley: It's receiving transmission from somewhere.

Brad: That's what the amplifier must be for.

Lilka: Shhhh! It's starting.

-----

[Everyone sees a transmission. It is broadcasted all over the world using anything with reflections.]

For All of Filgaia

First, greetings to all corrupt officials who have inherited power with no qualifications. And all the ignorant fools who have qualms about leading degenerate lives.

I am the Reform Party "Odessa" leader Vinsfeld Rhadamanthus. It's name worth remembering!

Let me state this at the start.  
Among those listening now, are traitors.  
And that is "you!"

If you've not averted your eyes, you'll have noticed the ground is full of monsters.  
They are impure creatures yet, no one tries to remove them.  
No one tries to bring peace. Why?  
Because people are cowardly animals.

As one who grieves the fate of Filgaia,  
I say this is because of the traitors!

We've handed the land over to the monsters.  
How can that be allowed to happen?

My harsh comments here should be understandable!  
We of Odessa swear an oath. A powerful National System will be built by eliminating foolish national boundaries!  
We are fundamentally different from statesmen who only bark like dogs at banquets!

We'll start with those three countries.  
First we'll hammer Meria Boule, Sylvaland and Guild Galad and take control. Once judgement is passed your relatives' blood will spill and you'll hear their cries.

But who can intelligently refute my resolutions?  
This is a rite of passage to make the future ours.  
It is a "burial". Yes. It is a "burial" for a new "creation!"

For the new era, judgement will be passed  
on the system which carries on the old ways.

To all who sympathize with Odessa's ideals come join Vinsfeld

The blood we spill together will purify  
the tainted earth and form the bonds of tomorrow's Filgaia.

There are those who criticize Odessa's acts as extreme.  
They spout malicious gossips.

We are prepared to stop it all.  
This is because we operate under the right principles!

The governing nation of "Odessa" will  
rise up from the rubble of ashes and dust.

Welcoming the leader who promises the next era...

...is an honor and blessing bestowed upon you.

-----  
[Back in Telepath Tower, Brad kicks the huge machine until it smokes.]

Brad:           A clandestine broadcast... They're mocking us!  
                  Besides the Emphatite transmitters, the mirrors, glass, and  
                  water we're all affected by the hijack!

Ashley:         That's... They used the Telepath Tower to send their terrorist  
                  message throughout Filgaia!

[Something appears behind them.]

Lilka:           What's that?

Brad:           Oh. The command was to destroy the amplifier. Missed that!

Ashley:         Here it comes!

[BOSS: Mysterious Phantom Being - Vagesta]

[The part defeats Vagesta.]

Ashley:         I can't just do nothing. Let's return to Damzen and explain the  
                  situation to the engineers at Telepath Tower.

-----  
<Call Menu>

Irving:         >This is Irving. Odessa could still be nearby. They're  
                  the ones who tampered with Telepath Tower. I want you to  
                  track them down right away.

[The party goes back to the family in Damzen City.]

@Woman:         Because the terrorists used the Telepath Tower for their  
                  broadcast... Does that make our family responsible?

@Man:           Ahhh! I know what we have to do! We must make sure Telepath  
                  Tower's Emphatite can't be used for a clandestine broadcast.  
                  Don't worry about that now! I'm more worried about the  
                  terrorists. Do something!

@Gramps:        This is unbelievable! Now those rats are using the Telepath  
                  Tower for their own purposes! And not just the Tower, either...

I hope they don't use the Booty Call for their misdeeds...

[The party leaves the house. Outside, a woman gets their attention.]

Strange Woman in Costume: Hey, you! Wait, wait I say! I take it you wish to capture those vile terrorists? If you do, you'll listen to me with utmost care.

Lilka: We're in a hurry! Catch us next time!

Strange Woman in Costume: You don't seem to know your place in the world, little girl!

Ashley: Lilka! Do you know anything about them?

Strange Woman in Costume: I saw a Gull Wing-class plane flying east from here. As far as I know, no country has used that type of flying machine since the Slayheim Liberation Army. So...you should be able to figure out the rest...

Ashley: Is it Odessa, the terrorist organization? But why would you know so much about such things? And why would you give information to us? Wait...before that...who are you?

Strange Woman in Costume: I can't believe how stupid you are, Ashley! Beware of ultraviolet rays! I'll tell you my face and name from within this protective costume! You should remember...

[She shows her face and tells that her name's Marivel.]

Marivel: Well, do you remember, Ashley?

Ashley: Not really... And...how do you know my name?

Marivel: So you don't remember, huh? Well, I guess you wouldn't... Oh well...it's not a big deal, I guess... I'll leave the other matter up to you!

[Marivel disappears. Irving contacts the party.]

Irving: It's me. From Damzen where you are...

Ashley: Is this about the flying machine heading east?

Irving: How do you know that?

Ashley: I just found out here in this town. Well, what should we do?

Irving: They must be the terrorists who issued the communique -- Odessa! They must have tampered with the Telepath Tower somehow and are trying to get away. Your next destination is to stop Odessa in their tracks immediately!

Ashley: Understood!

Irving: One more thing. Although I am commander of ARMS... I want you, Ashley, to take command when the time comes to fight.

Ashley: Me? Lead the attack?

Irving: That's right. After all, you're the team leader.

Ashley: Yes, sir! I will commence the pursuit of Odessa at once!

[Ashley and co. leave Damzen.]

-----  
~~Mt. Chug-Chug~~

[The party explores the dungeon and finds a machine with a lever.  
The lever won't move. Also, there's something sparkling in the  
equipment.]

Ashley: ..... Something's stuck in a crack between the equipment.  
I bet if I take it out, it'll be fine. Let's try the lever.  
What a beautiful crystal. It's sparkling. If passed through a  
light, it'll reflect 7 colors on the other side. Marina liked  
stuff like this.

[Ashley takes the crystal, the Emphatite, with him.]

[The party proceeds. Finally, they reach a big man.]

One-Eyed Giant: What a hassle! What a losing proposition.

Ashley: It's dangerous here! There's a good chance terrorists are  
hiding in the mountains here!

One-Eyed Giant: I already know that!

Ashley: !!!!!!!!

One-Eyed Giant: That's why I said I know.

Brad: This one is...so that's what you mean. I get it now.

Lilka: A terrorist! Not a monster confronting humans.

One-Eyed Giant: The "thread" told Antenora. She said someone's been  
following us. I haven't introduced myself yet, have I?

[BOSS: Special Cocytus Squad Member - Ptolomea]

Ptolomea: My luck stinks! Why do I have to be involved... Or could I  
say you all are in luck. I mean, you've got me for an opponent.  
Come on. Show me what you've got!

[The party fights Ptolomea. After a while...]

Ptolomea: If Judecca was your opponent, you'd all be toast now.  
You were lucky your opponent was sweet ol' innocent me.  
..... Well, it's time isn't it? Don't want to get left  
behind.

[Ptolomea's allies arrive. An airship is behind them.]

Ashley: Who are you?

Ptolomea: Listen up! We're the Odessa Special Unit  
"Ptolomea and His Fun Friends!"

Silver-Haired Key User: Don't mess with me, Ptolomea.

Guy with Glasses: Even so, are you really going to let them go?  
Weren't they that other group who was trespassing in Illsveil?  
Are they some vigilante force from a small town? There were  
girls in their group too. Should we shoot them here on the  
spot? We've got time to kill until the Varukisas heats up.

[An engine can be heard.]

Red-Haired Girl: No senseless killing! How many times do I have to tell you?!  
..... Looks like Varukisas is ready for departure.  
Let's go.

Ptolomea: Hey! Hey! I haven't finished my introduction! There's the four  
of us. Odessa's Special "Cocytus" Corp. We're broadcasting  
clandestinely! Since we didn't have contact, let's at least do  
some bold propaganda. Ha. Ha. Ha.

Ashley: Wa...Wait!

Inner Voice: Stretch out your arm and reach it, if you still have the  
strength.

Ashley: (This voice, again.)

[The Cocytus ride the Varukisas and flies off.]

Inner Voice: Who? Who's speaking to me? Who is it?

=====

```
#####  
#[1.08] Establishing Cooperation with Sylvaland #  
#####
```

[In Valeria's Chateau's Parlor...]

Ashley: Shoot! I thought we had 'em, but they flew off!  
We can't even touch 'em!

Irving: That's all too obvious... But it wasn't only the enemy flying  
machine that got in our way.

Lilka: What do you mean?

Brad: The border problem. Know what I mean?

Irving: Now I see. Very smart. Even if we had had a plane there, the  
border would have stopped us. There would have been trouble for  
violating their airspace. Only outlaws can fly wherever they  
want, when they want.

Lilka: I don't understand. Even though we are doing the right thing,  
why do things like that get in our way?

Irving: People live by closing their hearts tight. Walls of the heart



become invisible lines which divide the world. This is what "borders" are.

Ashley: Just as hearts are separated, so is one country from another.

Irving: It's sad, but all we can do is work hard to change what we can. Don't fret over what you can't change. I have an idea about the matter. You all wait until preparations are complete. Let's break up for now.

[Irving leaves the room.]

Lilka: ... What do we do now?

Brad: I don't have anything to do. I'll hang around here.

Lilka: Me too, I guess. Hey, Ashley, what about you?

Ashley: I'm going back to the Town of Meria.

Lilka: Oh, yeah. You picked up a pretty stone. Are you going to give it to Marina?

Ashley: Well, yeah. I think she'll like it.

Lilka: Hey, will you tell me? Ashley, are you and Marina lovers?

Ashley: What are you talking about? Of course not!!

Lilka: Ok, ok. ... Just checking.

Ashley: Why do you ask?

Lilka: Forget I asked!

@Brad: I can do other things than work, you know. As long as you have a break, you might as well take it.

@Lilka: Hey... Ashley, where are you going? Oh, I know. I guess you're going to see Marina. ... Well, you ought to get going!

[Ashley leaves the Chateau.]

-----  
~~Town of Meria~~

Tony: Hey, dude! How's it going?

Ashley: Hey, Tony! You, too, Scott! Hiya, Tim! How you guys been?

Tony: Fit as a fiddle and rarin' to go!! Of course, ol' Tim here has other things on his mind.

Tim: Hey, Tony... Don't tell him!

Tony: Why not? After all, he's our buddy, right? Tim is head over heels for some girl.

Tim: No! You've got it all wrong!!

Tony: Oh yeah? Sez who?

Ashley: Alright, just settle down, both of you.  
(I don't have time for this.)

Tony: All she did was talk to him. Now his head's in the clouds.

Tim: I said you're wrong!  
I just wanted to thank her for what she did.

Tony: She was nice to you. Now you have a crush on her, right?

Tim: No! You don't know jack!

Ashley: Knock it off, already! Hey, Scott, do something about this guy, would you?

Scott: In my humble opinion... Ashley is in a hurry.

Ashley: I'm on leave for a bit.

Scott: You came back just because you're on leave?  
I don't think so... You came to see Marina, right?

Ashley: Now, hold on just a minute, Scott. I was just, I...

Tony: You should have said so, dude. I wouldn't have held you up.

Tim: Don't waste precious time. You have to see her.

Ashley: You've got it all wrong! Marina and I... It's not like that between us.

Tony: Just go, dude! I know you want to see her right away.

Ashley: Now listen up, all of you! You've got it all wrong!

[Ashley hurries.]

Tim: I hope it works out between Ashley and Marina.

Tony: You're not the aggressive type, so that girl's perfect for you.

Scott: In my humble opinion... It seems Ashley is about to make a class change.

Tony: Huh? A class change? What's that?

Scott: Hee hee hee!

[Ashley enters the bakery.]

Ashley: Marina! I'm back!

Marina: Is it OK to be here? Aren't you on a mission?

Ashley: I'm on leave for a while, you know...

Marina: If I knew you were coming, I would have prepared something.

Ashley: That's OK. Marina, I have something for you.

[Ashley flashes the Emphatite.]

Marina: It's very pretty. What is it?

Ashley: It's called "Emphatite." They say it has the power to transmit thoughts. I don't know if this tiny piece can do that.  
... Here.

Marina: What? You mean...

Ashley: I want you to have it, Marina.

Marina: Are you sure?

Ashley: That's why I came back. What do I need it for, anyway?

[Marina grabs the Emphatite.]

Marina: Wow, this is great. Ashley...

Ashley: Yeah?

Marina: Thank you.

@Marina: Um, Ashley... Oh, never mind. It's nothing.  
Thanks for the Emphatite.

@Man outside the bakery: How awful. They showed the broadcast in a bucket. Where's the dignity in that?

@Tim: The 3 of us are going to from the Young ARMS.  
I hope we're as courageous as you guys.

@Scott: In my humble opinion... The terrorist group Odessa is most likely quite a large organization.

@Tony: Those are the chumps who attacked you guys, right?  
They're no match for you! Beat 'em all black and blue!  
Hey, that rhymes!

[Ashley leaves the town. He finds Brad and Lilka at the entrance.]

Lilka: There you are. I thought you'd be here.

[Marina is hurrying towards Ashley.]

Ashley: What's up? Why did you come together like that?

Brad: We have to go back. Our next mission has been decided.

Marina: Ashley...

Ashley: ..... Don't worry. Everything will be alright, Marina.

Marina: I guess so. Besides, I have this stone now.

Ashley: With this, it'll be like I never left. Bye.

-----  
~~Valeria Chateau~~

[Back in Valeria Chateau's parlor...]

Irving: As you can see, international cooperation is a serious problem. So I have letters from the King of Meria Boule asking for permission to operate in other countries. Sylvaland is friendly with Meria Boule, so we will go there first. Your next mission is to take this letter to the Queen of Sylvaland.

Lilka: How do we get to Sylvaland from here?

Irving: Use the life energy transporter called the "Live Reflector".

Ashley: The Live Reflector? You mean the lost technology?

Irving: There is an old Reflector southwest of here. I want you all to try to get it working again, and secure a way to Sylvaland!

Lilka: Hmm... In other words, we're on our own.

Irving: That's one way of putting it.

Lilka: I guess so...

Ashley: And where do we take the all-important letter?

Irving: Sylvaland Castle is located in the center of the Sylvan Woods. It's straight outside the Live Reflector. You won't have any trouble finding it. However, you could be attacked by Odessa. Whatever happens, you must deliver the letter.

[The party acquires the Letter for the Queen of Sylvaland.]

@Irving: Good luck on your mission to Sylvaland. We have to do this before we can solve the border problem.

@Altaecia: Power is a bright light that illuminates the darkness. But do not forget: A bright light also creates a shadow that is much darker. If I could choose, I would pick a gentle light that envelopes me softly.

[Ashley and co. leave the Chateau.]

<Call Menu>

Irving: >And mind your p's and q's when you're talking to the Queen. And whatever you do, do NOT be late.

-----  
~~Live Reflector~~

[In the Reflector room...]

\*The generator's productivity is not at its established rate nor

is it permitted by the regulatory board. To guarantee smooth operation, we'll temporarily freeze the function of the Live Reflector.

[It seems that the party needs to activate the generator first. They try to go and fix the problem. They go out the Reflector room and go to the room in the east. They find the path open.]

Ashley: There's evidence that someone broke in here.  
Who else would come here besides us? It has to be...

Lilka: I wonder if it's those terrorists from before?

Ashley: Hmm... It could be the "Odessa".

Brad: .....

Ashley: Let's hurry! But keep your guard up!

[They go through the door and see the "Young ARMS" inside.]

Ashley: Hey, you guys! What are you doing here?

Tony: Exploring, of course. I've decided that when I grow up, I'll be strong like you dude.

Ashley: You're stupid Tony! Turn back right now. You already know don't you? It's dangerous here!

Scott: In my humble opinion... There's something wrong about sending us back alone when it's so dangerous.

Lilka: The way you're speaking isn't very cute at all.

Scott: Oops. I got scolded by an older woman.

Lilka: Then, who got here before us?

Ashley: It's probably those kids.

Brad: So, what are you going to do?

Ashley: We have no choice. We'll have to protect them. They'll have to come with us until our mission is finished.

Tony: Darn. You don't trust us much. In reality, we got this far on our own strength.

Scott: In my humble opinion... It wasn't "our own strength" but the strength of Tim.

Tim: .....

Tony: Oh well...

[The kids join up with the party. They go further inside and find the operating display.]

Ashley: Here's the operating display. OK, I'm going to start-up the Live Reflectors!

[The generator starts working for a while but stops.]

Lilka:           What?  What???  This is so disheartening.

[The generator starts glowing.]

Tony:            It looks like something's coming out of there!  Is it a monster?

[BOSS:  Thunderbolt Battle Monster - Elebart]

Scott:           My...my...my...  In my humble opinion...  Rather than a monster,  
it would be appropriate for it to be called a "creature".

Tony:            Are you afraid, Scott?  You've changed the way you talk!

Tim:             No time for that.  We've got to get away!  It's dangerous here.  
Ashley!

Ashley:          Ah!  Hey, stand back.

Tim:             OK, let's go!

Tony:            Despite your babyface, you've got guts.

Tim:             It's not that.

[The Young ARMS leaves.  
The party destroys Elebart.]

Brad:            It seems those guys siphoned energy from the power reactor.

Lilka:           Then we should be OK, right?

[Ashley fires the generator... but it stops again.]

Ashley:          It's not working.  It's like there's no power at all.  
Is it because of the monster?

Tony:            Hey, not moving?  If so, can't we just give it some energy?  
But what do Live Reflectors run on?

[Something in Tim emits a bright light.]

Tim:             Wow!

Tony:            We were able to get here because of this mysterious power.

Ashley:          Tim, what is this power?

Tim:             I don't understand it either, but...  The amulet my mother  
left me, the Medium...  The Guardian of Life, the "Odoryuk"  
Medium is opening up.

[Tim starts floating in midair.]

Tim:             Ahh!

[A sparkle is released from Tim and heads for the generator.]

Ashley: Tim, Tim!

Tim: Ah!

Ashley: Thanks to you, the power reactor has been revived.  
But, that power. What is it?

Tim: ..... My mother told me the Medium's power is concealed.  
I wonder if that's it. Thank you very much. I'm fine now.  
Ashley, aren't you in the middle of a mission? Better hurry.

Ashley: Um... But, but...

Tony: Hey, don't worry, dude. Leave Tim to me. Besides, that "light"  
will protect me. Getting back to the Town of Meria from here is  
easy.

Brad: We're off schedule. The Sylvaland Ruling Family... we can't get  
there any later.

Ashley: When the mission's over, I'll be home immediately. Don't do  
anything like this while we're still away.

Tony: We get the message! While they're away, we, the Young ARMS will  
maintain peace in the Town of Meria.

Ashley: That's what I'm warning against.

[Everyone goes to the Reflector room.]

@Tony: Don't worry so much, OK? You'll make me lose confidence.

@Tim: The Medium's illumination will protect us all.  
It's fine. Probably.

@Scott: In my humble opinion, hurrying up would be a very good idea.

[The party activates the panel reading "Sacred Forest" and steps  
on the central pad.]

-----

[Meanwhile, Ptolomea, Caina, the Guy with Glasses, and Vinsfeld are  
gathered together in Odessa's HQ.]

Caina: And the Varukisas is now fully equipped. When considering the  
energy expenditure for takeoffs, frequent use is impossible.  
Our most serious enemy now is probably financial.

Ptolomea: For one who's considering making the world an enemy, life is  
hard.

Caina: That's because Ptolomea's plant is not operating as planned!

Vinsfeld: Proceed with the report.

Ptolomea: Yes, Sir. Currently, the Alchemic Plant is operating at above  
60%. So, we do have extra energy to divert to the Varukisas.  
Yes, but we still have the "Heimdall Gazzo" to work on, so it's  
not over yet.

Vinsfeld: Everyone who sees the black wings of the Varukisas is overwhelmed. It's clear the flights are an effective method to convey the menace of "Odessa". Ptolomea, our most important task is to bring the plant to 100%. And, do it as soon as possible.

Ptolomea: Yes, I'll take care of it.

Guy with Glasses: You look busy, or Ptolomea, do you prefer boredom?

Ptolomea: Care to trade places? Well? How about it, Judecca?

Judecca: Hmm, think I'll pass. That's beyond my jurisdiction so...send only fun work my way.

[The red-haired woman enters.]

Red-Haired Girl: My apologies for being late, but I have an update.

Vinsfeld: Let's hear it, Antenora.

Antenora: Yes. The group attacking the Varukisas before take-off has been identified as a unit called the "ARMS".

Vinsfeld: Did you say ARMS?

Caina: Weren't they used in the "Demon Summoning" experiment?

Antenora: Yes. Meria Boule's Special Unit ARMS of independent authority was annihilated when they formed. The ARMS that attacked us this time were not an ordinary unit. No. We should call them the same unit.

Ptolomea: Huh? I don't get it. Explain it again.

Antenora: Part of the annihilated ARMS were organized into a private unit. Is that clearer? Their non-alliances status makes it appear as if they are independent. We have verified that the buyer is low-level nobility.

Judecca: In other words, the ARMS are now a rich person's hobby.

Caina: Even so, they act like they're the "Allies of Justice". I hate that kind of stuff. It's offensive.

Ptolomea: Either way, they're no match for us now. There's no need to pay attention to...

Vinsfeld: But they're worth using. If they're hostile to us, we should just let them be so. They're "Allies of Justice". But what will happen when they're beaten to a pulp? The masses who witness this will fear Odessa's power. They'll have no choice but to accept our power. The ARMS... We'll have them performing plenty of pathetic antics.

Antenora: We've traced their activity. They're off toward Sylvaland.

Judecca: I've been waiting for this. It's just the job for me.

[Judecca walks away.]



Vinsfeld: Judecca!

Judecca: Do you disapprove? If so, I can skip it.

Vinsfeld: No, that's fine. Welcome them in as grand a manner as possible.

[Judecca nods and then leaves.]

Vinsfeld: Our enemy is our "finances". That's a good one, Caina.

Caina: If I spoke too freely, please excuse me.

Vinsfeld: I'm not criticizing. In fact, I commend your assessment.  
But there's no need to be concerned. Leave the financing to me.

Caina: Is it "That Man" again?

Vinsfeld: .....

-----

[The party appears at the Sacred Forest Live Reflector.  
They exit the area.]

-Ashley: I must hurry... Sylvaland Castle is in the middle of the forest...

-Brad: Sylvaland is a forest kingdom. The castle is located in the forest.

-Lilka: Yikes! Oh, man, I gotta get going but FAST!  
Now which way was Sylvaland Castle, anyhow?  
All I can see from here are trees.

~~Sylvaland Castle~~

[The party finds Sylvaland Castle. In the throne room...]

Ashley: I have come bearing a Royal Letter from the King of Meria Boule.

[A soldier takes the letter and gives it to the Queen.]

Queen of Sylvaland: I had heard rumors, but I had no idea... A fighting force with no allegiance to any country...very interesting indeed!  
It does seem like an effective way to counter Odessa, which also operates as a separate entity...

Ashley: And yet...

Queen of Sylvaland: I don't think I can accept what is written in this letter. I cannot easily allow free access to our country's Live Reflector. If you of ARMS have permission to come and go as you like, our people might come to doubt their security. After all, why should I consider you of ARMS any different from Odessa?

Ashley: Your Highness, you see...

Queen of Sylvaland: I know. I know...You want to "defeat Odessa," as it says here.

Ashley: .....

Queen of Sylvaland: It is only reasonable for the powerless to fear the powerful. I have no guarantee that you will not begin acting like Odessa once you have free access to my country. You see my point?

Ashley: I see...

Queen of Sylvaland: I'm terribly sorry, but I cannot accept your proposal. Please convey that to the King of Meria Boule, along with my greetings. Oh...wait... It was actually Sir Valeria who proposed this, wasn't it? Only he could have come up with an idea as an independent fighting force. Please tell him to come and visit me with his lovely sister, not ARMS. Thus wishes the Queen of Sylvaland!

Ashley: I understand, Your Highness.

[A Sylvaland Soldier enters the room.]

Soldier 1: I have an emergency report! Oh...please forgive, Your Highness...

Queen of Sylvaland: Never mind! What's so important!?

Soldier 1: Oh yes... There has been a terrorist attack in the Sylvaland town of Halmentz! Reports suggest it was the terrorist band...

Ashley: Odessa!

[The Soldier nods.]

Ashley: Your Highness!

Queen of Sylvaland: ..... Even if we put out a call to arms now, our knights won't be able to assemble in time. Well, then...shall we see just how fast our independent fighting force is, then?

Ashley: With pleasure! Let's go, everyone!

[The party leaves.]

Queen of Sylvaland: (When we meet such grave danger, nothing should keep us apart. That's the obvious conclusion, now that I think about it. I wonder when it was I forgot that true strength comes from joining together? ..... But...)

Soldier 2: Your Highness, is something the matter?

Queen of Sylvaland: No, nothing... So, what did you think of them?

Soldier 2: They seemed very honorable to me, Your Highness. I saw no signs of ulterior motives. I believe they are simply acting for the common good.

Queen of Sylvaland: I believe you are correct. They are indeed honorable and their desire to protect Filgaia genuine.

Queen of Sylvaland: (Of course that is also part of what makes me so nervous...)

-----  
~~Halmetz~~

[The party enters the town of Halmetz. It's awfully quiet.]

Lilka: This is the town, right? The one that was attacked by Odessa?

Ashley: Ahh... It's hard to believe that information was incorrect though... OK, everyone, let's break up and start searching Halmetz.

[The party breaks up.]

Brad: It's quiet, but something seems wrong...

[After searching the place, the party meets up.]

Ashley: Well, what did you find?

Lilka: Personally, this town is a little boring to me...

Brad: There's no one here. It's a ghost-town. But what's even more strange are all the signs of life. People were here recently that some of the food is still warm!

[The church bell starts to ring.]

Lilka: There might be somebody...

[Lilka walks to the church.]

Brad: ...Watch out, it's a trap!

[An explosion occurs. Ashley is able to save Lilka from harm. Judecca can be seen standing on the roof of one of the houses.]

Judecca: Whenever I have this much fun, my glasses start falling down.

Ashley: Odessa!?

Judecca: Indeed! I am a member of "Cocytus", Odessa's special forces team. You don't need to know that, though.

Lilka: Come down from there and face us like a man!

Judecca: An uppity little girl, aren't you? I cannot grant your wish, for if I were to fight you myself I might accidentally kill you. Trask! I leave it to you!

[Judecca summons...]

[BOSS: Poisonous Armored Dragonoid - Trask]

[The party fights the Dragonoid. After some time fighting it...]

Voice of Judecca: Trask is a specially designed anti-personnel weapon beast. None of your techniques will have any effect on it. Well, enough chit-chat for now. It's time for you all to take a little nap...

Ashley: Watch out, everyone... Something's coming...

[The monster unleashes a black energy. The screen turns black.]

Inner Voice: (Can't...let it...end... ..like this!)

Ashley: I can hear it...from inside myself...!

Inner Voice: (You must take the power! Now, before it's too late.)

Ashley: It's too late! Nooooo! I won't let it be! Aaaahhhh!

[The screen turns white.

The party is down. Judecca is still watching from above.]

Judecca: What's this? This wasn't my plans... Trask was blown away...  
And with only one blast from that light!

[Judecca jumps down.]

Judecca: I didn't imagine they could damage Trask... But still, it looks  
like I can still capture them as originally planned...

Judecca: That light! It could have gotten me as well...!

-----  
~~Golgotha Prison~~

[Ashley wakes up and finds himself and his allies locked inside a prison.]

Brad: Are you conscious now?

Ashley: Ahhh! But I don't feel well. I feel like I'm going to puke.

[Ashley shakes his head and stands.]

Ashley: What in the world happened?

Brad: I don't know. After I was attacked by the Trask, I couldn't  
move my body. Then... Through a hazy consciousness I saw  
everything turn white. That's all I remember.  
When I came to, I was locked here.

Ashley: So it's a prison. Darn! Things like this always happen to me.

[Ashley goes near Lilka.]

Brad: Let her stay like that for a bit. It'll help her body recover.

[After a while, Lilka wakes up.]

Ashley: Lilka?

[Lilka yawns.]

Lilka: I'm fine. I'm perfectly fine. But...

Ashley: Did something happen?

Lilka: No. It's nothing.

Lilka: (That's right, Ashley is Ashley. I wonder what happened to me. For example, maybe for a minute I thought Ashley was you.)

[Lilka shakes her head and stands.]

Lilka: But more importantly, how long are we going to stay like this? We've gotta do something. Right?

Brad: Of course.

Ashley: Let's start by thinking how to escape from here.

[The party examines the place. They see a block a little bit tilted compared to the others.]

[GAME MESSAGE]: \*Is it tilted just a bit here? It's caught on something!

[Brad kicks the block.]

[GAME MESSAGE]: \*The tilt is fixed now. It looks like it could be moved! You can move parts of blocks and stone images by pressing and holding the directional keys.

[The party moves a block and sees an opening hidden beneath it.]

-Ashley: There's a piece of floor missing! I think we can escape from here.

-Brad: Did former prisoners do this? We can escape through this hole.

-Lilka: A muddy hole...yuck! I've got an aversion to such places.

[The party goes down the hole.]

[The party explores the area and reaches a locked door, with a lever beside it. A man is standing outside.]

@Man: I watched all the villagers get arrested and followed them here, but I'm at my limit. Behind that door, the villagers are imprisoned. The lever is hard to move, but you guys can manage. Help save everyone.

[The lever is hard to move, so the party lets Brad move it. He succeeds. The party enters the opened door.]

Ashley: These people are...

Man 1: We are the residents of the village of Halmetz. You all are...

Ashley: We are not part of "Odessa"! We are fighting to save everyone from the tyranny of the terrorists.

Man 2: We all might be saved? Will we all get a chance to return to Halmetz together?

Ashley: Take heart. I promise everyone will have a safe rescue!

Man 1: This guy with glasses suddenly pulled a weapon on us.  
After that, we were showed into this dungeon and locked up.

Boy: So, because you are going to help us, can we believe that you're  
real allies?

Lilka: Of course. So, relax. We'll return to your village with all of  
you.

Brad: But traveling in a group this large could be dangerous.

Ashley: Then, I'll go ahead and check things out. Once safe passage is  
verified you all can leave together.

@Lilka: Hey, don't blow it now.

@Brad: There's no time. Hurry.

@Man: This is where death row inmates were housed and executed back  
when there was a death sentence. One can't possibly feel safe  
in such a place. The execution area is at the end. It's a short  
way out from there, but you might not be alive.

[Ashley goes on ahead to check the area.  
He passes by a room where soldiers are gathered, so he eavesdrops a bit.]

Odessa Soldier 2: The preparations at the execution should be about ready,  
right? I don't trust that guy, even though he's on our side.

Odessa Soldier 1: It's safer if you don't talk so carelessly about  
Mr. Judecca.

Ashley: Judecca... Plotting something again?

[Moving on, Ashley reaches the execution area.]

Judecca: Welcome to the execution ground! You finally made it here.  
I've been waiting. But...I wasn't the only one waiting for you.  
This...

[Ashley looks around, he finds Brad and Lilka crucified above.]

Ashley: Tsk... Lilka! Brad!

Brad: Gra!

Lilka: Sorry... The villagers we just helped were taken as human  
shields. They said "resist and they're dead". All of this was a  
trick. He plotted all of this!

Ashley: Hang on. I'm on my way!

Judecca: Where are you going? That's not your duty.

Ashley: What!?

Judecca: Your opponent is little Trask.

[Judecca summons Trask.]

Ashley: This is the one from before.

Judecca: Don't think about resisting! I'll kill your buddies if you do...  
But the preparations aren't finished yet.

Brad: You mean it's a warning.

Judecca: Yup. The plan got a little messed up, but there's a reason I captured you ARMS people. By executing all of you publicly, I can rid myself of enemies and also show the terror of Odessa. We didn't kill the people of Halmetz when we caught them so they'd witness the event.

Ashley: How evil can you be?!

Brad: It's something a very vain terrorist would do.

Judecca: Look, even I'd prefer to take care of it myself. But, we have our reasons. I'd appreciate your understanding on this. Go, Trask! But don't kill them too quickly! Graaaa!

Lilka: Ashley!

Judecca: Resist and I'll kill the hostages!  
This is so thrilling. My glasses are about to fall off.

[Trask starts attacking, while Ashley dodges its attacks.]

Inner Voice: (What is it? What are you doing?)

Ashley: (This voice is echoing again. What is this?)

Inner Voice: (Don't think. Hesitation is only for fools.  
What you need now is hope and desire.)

Ashley: (That's it. I want "power". I want enough "power" to overcome  
any adversity. If I have that...)

Inner Voice: (Then take a hold of it.)

Ashley: (Of what?)

Inner Voice: (Oneself.)

[Ashley emits a bright light.]

Judecca: This light. It's from that time. Change of plans!  
Kill all the hostages!

[Judecca sees that Brad and Lilka are free from the cross.  
It seems that Marivel saved them.]

Marivel: It reached even the lady consort's child. You can't do as you  
please!

Marivel: (It's the same light. ... This says "the end". The light of  
"the start". But I believe it. This time I was late.  
The light is nostalgic. Right, Ashley?)

Judecca: Again, something I didn't plan on! Darn, I can't keep up.

[Judecca runs away. Ashley transforms in a Black Knight.]

Ashley: This is from that time. What happened to me? I don't understand. I don't understand it. But the one thing I do know is... I know I can "fight"! This "pain" and "form" are mine. It's the "power" to fight.

[Ashley defeats Trask.]

Ashley: Ha, ha, ha! It's finished. .... No. That's wrong. It's started. Woa! My...strength...is...disappearing.

[Ashley returns to his original form.]

Lilka: Ashley, what the heck happened?

Brad: It must mean this guy was chosen by ARMS. It's not just about "power". It's about shouldering some burden. If that's not the case, I wouldn't be able to overcome the battles I am about to face.

Lilka: From now on...

-----  
~~Sylvaland Castle~~

Queen of Sylvaland: I was most impressed with your actions on behalf of Halmetz. By the way, Ashley...

Ashley: Yes, Your Highness!

Queen of Sylvaland: Are you sufficiently recovered? There were reports that you suffered injury in your recent action.

Ashley: ..... Thank you very much for asking. Your Highness, but it was nothing.

Queen of Sylvaland: I am very pleased to hear it. We can't have anything untoward happen to you while protecting Sylvaland, can we?

[A Sylvaland Soldier gets something from the Queen and hands it to Ashley.]

Ashley: This couldn't be...

Queen of Sylvaland: I give you permission to use the Live Reflectors in Sylvaland. This is a Royal Letter to the King of Meria Boule to that effect. I hope I can entrust you with it.

Ashley: Your Highness...thank you!

Queen of Sylvaland: This time, it is I who should thank you. Isn't that so, Sir Valeria!

[Sir Valeria enters.]

Irving: I thank you for the cooperation of Sylvaland. It will ease our labors.



Ashley: (Irving...)

Queen of Sylvaland: Sorry to have involved you in this unpleasant affair...  
Let us end it here. If you go below the castle, I believe you'll  
find someone waiting for you.

Ashley: Thank you, Your Highness.

Irving: Go ahead. I'll see you later. The formalities for granting you  
permission to use the Live Reflectors may take some time.

Ashley: I understand. We will wait.

Queen of Sylvaland: I hope you don't mind waiting for the official papers to  
be drawn up. I guess we have too much red-tape around here.  
We could learn some things from you, it seems.

[The party leaves the audience chamber.]

[The party reaches the castle entrance.  
There, they find the townspeople waiting for them.]

Man 1: Oh!

Man 2: We were waiting for you!

[The party comes down.]

Man 1: That's funny - they just look like normal people to me.

Man 2: But they're the heroes who saved us! They're more powerful than  
they look!

Ashley: Heroes!? Us...?

Man 2: Of course!

Man 1: Is there anyone else around?

Girl: I heard you were magnificent!

Old Man [To Lilka]: I have a single son who is just about your age, Miss.  
You aren't single, are you?

Woman [To Brad]: You're pretty scary-looking... I'm glad you're on our side!

Man 2: I heard a rumor that a mysterious Black Knight appeared.  
Did you see it?

Lilka: J-just you wait a second!

Irving: I'm so glad you're all safe.  
There's nothing more ARMS could have hoped for.

Man 1: You were a great aid to us in a dangerous time.

Man 2: I trust you will continue to fight the terrorists.

Irving: Of course. There is no one but ARMS to stand up against Odessa.

-----  
[Meanwhile, In Odessa Headquarters...]

Antenora: The scout's report is in.

Vinsfeld: Did Judecca succeed?

Antenora: No, he has failed. Destroying the ARMS isn't so simple.  
It appears not a single person was killed. Our casualty list reports "Trask", the anti-human monster, as demolished.

Vinsfeld: "Trask" was... Impossible.  
Their power can't compete! How did it happen?

Antenora: Yes. According to the report, a grotesque "Black Knight" appeared in a flash. A high level energy source registered at the battle location at that time.

Vinsfeld: A grotesque "Black Knight"? So he's the "trump card" for the ARMS. Or was he...

Antenora: What do you wish us to do?

Vinsfeld: We can't let it go. With our operating funds, secure energy for the "Heimdall Gazzo". Then there's the "ARMS" gaining influence. We've got problems. The "Secret Evil Society" is so terrible. Ha. Ha.

Antenora: You must be joking.

Vinsfeld: With Caina's Demon Summoning, our forces can grow forever. Our victory is certain if we exert pressure all at once with our superior power. I've always gotten everything I've ever wanted. Power, you, and Filgaia are all mine.

Antenora: .....

Vinsfeld: You have new orders. Execute "Operation Guardian" as planned and put a rush on getting hold of that boy. Tonight, I want you here with me.

Antenora: Yes.

=====  
#####  
#[1.09] Find the Aguelite and Geratron #  
#####

[Three days later...]

[The party can be seen on Sir Valeria's room.]  
Ashley is deep in thought.]

[FLASHBACK:]

Marina: Hi! Are you back for good? Or are you on leave?

Ashley: Just on leave. I have to go back soon.

Marina: I knew it...

Ashley: Hey, don't look so depressed! I'm proud of what I'm doing. Marina, I want to tell you about what we've done... all our heroic deeds!

Marina: But then you won't have any time to rest.

[Ashley grabs Marina's hands.]

Ashley: Marina, I just have to tell you. I don't need much rest, anyway.

Marina: Oh, very well.

Ashley: There's so much to tell. I don't know where to start. We've been through so much. We've seen and done so many things! It hasn't been easy, but the feeling you get when you save someone is priceless. Just the other day, people were calling me a "hero".

Marina: "Hero"?

Ashley: Yeah, "Hero". Just what I always wanted to be. ...Of course, I had help. I didn't act alone. But when they called me the hero who fought against Odessa, it felt good.

Marina: .....

Ashley: People expect a lot, and that gives me the strength to go on. I feel I have to be the "Hero" who dispels people's fears... the "Hero" who saves the world.

Marina: That doesn't make sense.

Ashley: ...Marina?

Marina: Is what you're describing really a "Hero", Ashley? It doesn't sound like one. Sure, some horrible things are happening in Filgaia. But does that mean that Ashley the "hero" has to do something about it?

Marina: Is a hero just someone who is sacrificed for others who can't solve their own problems? By naming you their "hero" does everyone shirk their own duties and just stop trying? If "hero" is just a euphemism for "sacrifice", then no, I'm not happy about it at all. Especially when the "hero" is someone I care for...

Ashley: Now wait a minute, Marina. I...

Marina: I thought this stone would keep us together over the distance. I thought my feelings for you would bridge the emotional gap between us. But the reality is that... we hardly see each other. Now that you're always away, I think of you more than before. And yet I feel farther away from you than ever... Tell me... Are you still Ashley? Are you still the Ashley I know? Tell me! I can't take this anxiety anymore!

Ashley: ..... Marina I... I...

Marina: I understand, Ashley. I know you're Ashley.  
I know, but I torment you because of my own insecurity.  
...I'm horrible.

Ashley: No. 知 the horrible one. There's something I have to tell  
you, but I can't find the right words. It's something that will  
only make your anxiety worse.

Marina: Forget about it for now, Ashley. Just get some rest.

[Marina leaves the room. FLASHBACK ENDS.]

[The scene switches back to Irving's room.]

Lilka: ... Hey, Ashley! Are you paying attention?

Ashley: ... Oh, sorry! I was just daydreaming.

Brad: Still feeling the effects...?

Ashley: No, I'm just tired, that's all.

Ashley: Sorry, but would you please explain our mission once more?  
Well, before that... You did help us back at Golgotha Prison.

Lilka: We also met in Damzen City. Do you remember?

Marivel: I am offended! I can't believe you would miss my entrance -- I,  
the behind-the-scenes ruler of all.

Irving: Marivel is an authority on lost technology. Ever since we became  
acquainted through correspondence, she has been deeply involved  
in ARMS.

Lilka: ... Really? "Correspondence" ...?

Irving: I guess some people like those things, especially rich folk.

Marivel: I remember you as a little bit more reliable, though...  
Or will you finally realize... that you are The Black Knight,  
"KnightBlazer?"

Ashley: "KnightBlazer"

Irving: What you transformed into during the incident. The Black Knight  
who wields fiery destruction. It's what you have been  
christened.

Irving: Marivel.

Marivel: I heard from Irving that... You are the sole survivor of Odessa's  
Demon Summoning ritual, aren't you? The demon who possess you  
and the lost Guardian Blade, "Argetlahm", have met. These two  
powers joined within you and came to a balance, neither attaining  
supremacy. The holy power and the demonic combined with your  
own soul to become KnightBlazer. That is "another you", you see.

Ashley: KnightBlazer... Another me...

Marivel: I wouldn't worry about it now. You seem to have good control over Argetlahm. Right now you should concern yourself only with the current threat: Odessa.

Ashley: I've been wondering, but... ..do you know me? You seem to speak like you do.

Marivel: Don't you think it's rude to pry into a girl's secrets?

Ashley: ???

Irving: I'm leaving Marivel in charge of your health. We have no idea what we should do, so we'll have to just believe her for now. There are too many things we don't know. Ashley, I wouldn't tell anyone if I were you.

Ashley: ..... I understand.

Marivel: If that's settled, then I'll tell you about your mission.

Ashley: Our mission? Oh yeah, I forgot. I'm sorry. Tell me about it again.

Marivel: I'm telling you, it's the lost technology! Those Odessa vermin are trampling in Filgaia with lost technology!

Ashley: So our next mission is to counter their flying machine Varukisas.

Marivel: Right! In order to take it on, we need fighting power equal to or superior to theirs. Now do you see? This is where we come in! We must use our knowledge to bring back the newest and strongest lost technology!

Lilka: (If it's already "lost" then how can it be new?)

Ashley: (I don't think we should leave this up to you-know-who...)

Marivel: Hey, you two! Stop whispering over there!

Irving: Well, that's the story. There are two types of Energy Crystals we must obtain: Aguelite and Germatron. With the energy of these crystals, we can power the EMMA motor.

Ashley: The lost technology you're talking about... it's a flying machine?

Irving: I don't want to spoil the surprise, do I?

Brad: I know what to do. But where do we find these crystals?

Irving: Aguelite Crystal is mined near the Town of Holst. A few Germatron Crystals are supposed to be left in the shut-down Raline observatory.

Ashley: I'll have to see them with my own eyes, though.

Irving: The Town of Holst and the Raline Observatory are in Sylvaland. Thus we can use the Live Reflector to transport there. I don't

care which you get first, but we need those crystals!

Marivel: An egregious affront to us who rule the world!  
I'll take those Odessa scoundrels down a peg or two!

@Marivel: Still haven't gotten the crystals? You gotta get cracking.  
I will always be youthful, but you humans get old and decrepit  
before you know it.

@Irving: The Chateau staff will know where the Town of Holst and the...  
Raline Observatory are. Sorry, but please ask them.

@Man near 2F elevator: The Energy Crystals are often mined from thick veins  
of the mineral Raline. Prime examples are the Town of Holst and  
Raline Observatory where I once worked. Both can be reached  
easily if you use the Live Reflector. For Aguelite, pick 'Ruins  
Mine' and for Germatron, pick 'Dragon's Vein' and jump in.

@Altaecia: Everyone hesitates upon acquiring power. But you should consider  
yourself fortunate. Fortunate to have the option of hesitating,  
that is. Perhaps that is why the powerless look toward the  
powerful with envy...and fear.

<Call Menu>

Marivel: >Find the Aguelite Crystal and the Germatron Crystal! Got it?  
One's in Holst and one<sup>痴</sup> in Raline Observatory.  
Get 'em and make me proud!

Kate: >Hello. It's me, Kate. To get to Holst, use the red Live  
Reflector and then head west. To reach Raline Observatory, use  
the yellow Live Reflector and go north.

-----  
~~Aguelite Mine Shaft~~

[The party goes deep into the Aguelite Mineshaft in Holst.  
They find the Aguelite inside a chest.]

Ashley: This is called Aguelite. It's a type of energy.

Lilka: Wow. It's so beautiful. It looks like a jewel.

Brad: "Aguelite" and "Germatron". The two are said to be high-density  
crystals which supported ancient civilization's energy needs.  
The energy in the ruins was extracted naturally over time.  
Entombed in the earth, it became a corpse of sorts that had been  
dug out as "crystal".

Brad: People are drawn to light that's strong and fleeting.  
They think it'll make them shine.

Lilka: Wow. You're so smart. And a bit romantic, too.

Brad: "Aguelite" and "Germatron" are used to revive lost technology.  
It's one of the measures to resurrect the deadly weapons created  
by ancient civilizations. It's light brings "destruction".  
It causes the black wings of "death" and "destruction" to  
flutter. That's why people want it.

Lilka: Irving would... would never do that, right?  
He's not trying to get it for that, right?

Ashley: I believe power, power itself, isn't good or bad.  
I believe what's key is the heart of the person who uses it.  
So...

Lilka: I think you're right. It'll be OK, right?

[The party acquires Aguelite.]

Ashley: No need to overstay. I'm going to finish this mission and go  
back.

Lilka: I do prefer light from the sun.

[The party leaves the Mine Shaft and heads to their next destination,  
Raline Observatory.]

-----  
~~Raline Observatory~~

A mournful cry in the dark...: Oh no! H E L P!

Ashley: Wow!

Lilka: Making something this suspicious is really quite a feat?

Ashley: Even so, acting like we didn't see it might not be so good.

Lilka: In this case, it's acting like we didn't hear it.

[The party goes further.]

[BOSS: Elemental Spirit - Undines]

[They see Undines beating two lizardmen.]

Lizardian A: Oh, my traveling friends, this treatment with no explanation...

Lizardian B: Ard!

Ashley: (Who the heck are they?)

Lilka: (Human? Lizard? Or are they half and half just as they seem?)

Ashley: (They fit together a little too well. It can't be...)

Lilka: (Hmm. It can't be?)

Lizardian A: Don't just stand there talking. Words have no real power after  
all. I can't move a hand, leg or tail. Our consciousness and  
fate are in a nosedive.

Lilka: I don't fully understand, but I won't sleep well if this keeps  
up.

Ashley: I'll give you the details after we save them!

[The party defeats Undines.]

Lizardian A: Phew. Phew. For a joke, it sure came close to death on the job.

Ashley: OK! Let's get going!

Lizardian A: Ah! A hero's adventure is about to start here and now.

Ashley: It's dangerous, so you all need to take cover.

Lizardian A: Thanks for asking!

Ashley: What?

Lizardian A: I am Liz and this is my assistant.

Lizardian B: Ard...Ard!

Liz: Hey, it's Ard.

Lilka: You're kidding. You understand what's he's saying?

Liz: We've known each other a long time.  
But not after just 2 or 3 molts. No?

Ard: Ard!

Ashley: What are you guys doing here?

Liz: As you can see, we are kind-hearted children of science.

[Liz strikes a pose.]

Liz: No matter how I look...

Lilka: I didn't see that, but please continue.

Liz: This is a volcanic region. The energy that continually spouts from the earth is perfect for an excursion in peacetime. This is a scientist's ambition! It can't be stopped until it's fulfilled!

Ashley: Such honorable intentions. We don't understand. And so...

Liz: Don't leave me here! How about having a party to boost morale? The alternating events of joy and sorrow will taint future developments.

Ashley: I understand. Let's work together here at the observatory. Just don't hold us back.

Liz: Wow! What a delight! Not holding one back is my one specialty! I was born for this day.

Ard: Ard, Ard, Ard!

Liz: At the very least, I'd expect 3 kowtows, but do we live justly. As a resourceful general, let's get to the gate. After that...



[The party moves on and finds a lever they can't reach.]

-Ashley: This lever is...

-Lilka: That must be it.

-Brad: That's the...

Liz: I can see it!

Lilka: Don't talk so loudly. It echoes.

Liz: So essentially the lever on the other side needs to be moved?  
A vision flashed on my lids of me pushing the lever like a bee,  
and dancing like a butterfly. All for wanting the title of the  
Shooting King. Ha. Ha. Ha.

Ashley: Do you have a plan?

Liz: With the scientific endorsements, we've got more than we can  
handle. But, isn't that what anyone with unusual  
characteristics hopes for? It's just like the selfish  
expectations transfer students harbor.

Ashley: I don't care what it is, just hurry up.

Liz: Being impatient is a waste of energy. Be that as it may, the  
Shooting King's background has no close relationships.  
Let's go, Ard! The friendship cross.

Ard: Ar...d.

[Ard throws Liz to the other side to activate the lever. A path appears.]

Liz: Oh, memories are invading like an air raid.

Ashley: The ever-changing panorama! We're in for it!

Liz: You can't just leave me here. It is I, the one who loved you!

[The party activates a lever that bridges Liz to where the party is.]

Liz: Punch Drunk Momentalism.

Ashley: You OK, Shooting King?

Liz: A homing instinct brought me back from a secret flower garden.  
That a healthy spirit comes from a healthy body, is an old joke,  
indeed.

[The party moves on and finds a moving wall trap that shuts their path.]

-Ashley: The wall is moving!

-Brad: Oh no, a trap.

-Lilka: No way! I don't believe it!

[They hit a blue panel and the trap resets.]

Ashley: It looks like the trap has been reset.

Lilka: Really, though, nothing's been resolved. What will you do?

Liz: Only a novice would become unhinged by such an historical emergency.

Ashley: So, do you have a plan?

Liz: How I've waited for those words! It's easy.  
Just run through before the wall shuts.  
Sounds just like an antelope!

Ard: Ard...Ard!

Ashley: When you guys do it, it looks like a collar-lizard.  
Oh, never mind. It looks like it's worth trying.

[The party runs through the path before the wall shuts.  
Ard gets stuck.]

Ard: Ard.

Liz: Ah. What a tragedy! I will assist even at the risk of my life!  
Let's go, Samurai. Rah! Rah! Freedom! Freedom!

Ashley: What the heck are you doing? Are you only going to cheer?  
We better do something ourselves!

@Ard: Ard...

@Liz: Isn't there a doctor here?!

[The party grabs a statue and places it between the crashing walls.  
Ard jumps above the statue and goes past the trap.]

Ard: Ard...Ard, Ard. Ard, Ard. Ard, Ard, Ard. Ar...Ard, Ard...Ard,  
Ard. Ard...d. Ard, Ard. Ard...Ard, Ard. Ard...Ard, Ard. Ard,  
Ard...Ard, A...rd. Ard, Ard...Ar...d.

Liz: Ard is saying "Thanks".

Lilka: That's awfully short!

Ashley: Are you translating correctly? And while your buddy's in a  
crisis situation, you're doing a silly dance prayer.

Liz: Hmmm...A dance prayer. How manic. That's not a dance prayer.  
It does promise satisfaction. It's very popular in the Agaruta  
Region.

Ashley: Let's go. Don't dilly dally.

Liz: But... As a practical problem, isn't not letting an intellectual  
speak the same as a death sentence?

[The party moves on and encounters another lever that they can't reach.]

Lilka: Another lever. And it's this kind, again.

[Everyone stares at Liz.]

Liz:           Why do you stare at me? Such intensity is hard to ignore.  
After all, it's just one body.

Ashley:       Since you're a scientist, I wonder if you can do something.  
Something scientific that's...

Liz:           I understand. Let's fly! Everyone's scientific hopes make me  
strong. There's a fine line between fantasy and reality.

Ashley:       And fly. It's not even witty, much less scientific.

Liz:           Let's go, Ard! The Friendship Cross.

[Ard throws Liz to the lever.]

Liz:           Dizzy Lizzy!

Ashley:       Let's get going!

[The party moves along.]

Lilka:        Hey! Hey Ashley! He's staring at us.

Ashley:       Don't meet his gaze. You won't petrify, but judging from  
previous experiences, you might lose consciousness!  
.....

Liz:           Don't leave me behind. It is I, the one who loved you all!

Ashley:       Sorry. Let me go get help.

Liz:           You promise? That's a promise, right?!

[The party moves along. They find a lever that causes Liz to reach the party.]

Liz:           You're late! You're so late I was just about to lay a hand on  
this poetry anthology I've kept hidden.

Ashley:       I don't care if it's a poetry or the Emperor of Death.  
I'm in a hurry.

Liz:           It's as if you're casting me aside! Or are you just mocking me?

[The party moves on and comes to a wall blocking their path.  
There's a weird face carved on another wall nearby. They check it.]

Liz:           ..... Wow. I wonder why...

Ashley:       Did something happen?

Liz:           Wow. There's a lot they don't teach in school.

Ashley:       Just give a short explanation.

Liz:           In the back of the mouth in fact, pretty far back, there's  
switch. Just imagining the switch and the hand intercepted by  
the block makes me quiver.

Ashley: Hmm... I can't reach it.

Liz: Ha. Ha. Ha! So...sorry.

Ashley: What is it this time?

Liz: This terrible. I just came up with a brilliant idea!

Ashley: I hate to interrupt your glee, but if you have a solution, tell me.

Liz: Oh, it's easy, really. If we use our graceful tails and stay flexible, the rest is easy.

Ashley: Please. I hate saying this after asking for help, but please, don't make things worse.

Liz: Remember that "gentleness" is one of our talents after "kindness". I'm leaving it up to you, Ard!  
Time to show your power!

Ard: Ar...Ard!

[Ard inserts his tail on the mouth and it reaches the switch.  
The wall blocking their way is gone.]

Ashley: Your partner seems to be complaining about something.

Liz: It seems... If you take calcium before bed, the absorption is best. No one fusses like Lizard.

Ashley: Look at you, at your age, crying and complaining...  
in public like that. There's no need for it.

Liz: At any rate... It seems his tail got caught in the switch.  
How do you propose we proceed?

Liz: (We could just let him die. That's one possibility.  
I mean, the guy has lived long enough already.)

Ashley: Th-That's instigation of murder! Don't drag us into your crazy plans! Let's hurry and save him.

Liz: Yeah...not long ago, you would've deserted me, a No.  
I scientist.

[Brad kicks the back of the wall where Ard is stuck.]

Ard: Ard...Ard, ArArAr. Ard, Ar-d!

Liz: He's very "grateful" for the rescue.  
Now this is a top-notch human drama unfolding.

Ashley: It seems like one problem turns into 10 problems...  
which turn into 20 problems. How do you manage to stir up so  
much trouble?

Liz: Is trouble like a bamboo shoot, spouting up everywhere?

Ashley: Or is trouble like a snowball, growing bigger and bigger?

[Moving along, the party finds yet another lever down where they can't reach.]

Ashley: Look, a lever in a place like that.

Liz: Hmmm...there's a lever.

[Everyone stares at Liz.]

Liz: Might there be another scramble request for me?

Ashley: You're not part of the battle so it's the least you can do. Besides, good players anticipate their turn and perform with perfection. Scientifically speaking...

Liz: Ha! Science. Science is unavoidable as a two-bit scientist. Ready for the opening of the Show of World Wonders?

[Liz and Ard gets in position for the Friendship Cross.]

Liz: Are you watching? The goal of science is to give people hopes and dreams.

Ashley: I think I'm staring at the dangers that go with scientific progress.

Lilka: Don't call it science. It's really just a combination of many skills.

Ashley: All right. All right. Just switch the lever on.

Liz: Ahhhh...ahhhh! What an ominous sound.

[Liz flips the switch.]

Liz: Wow! Teleport!

[Everyone watch the wall go down while Liz falls into oblivion.]

Lilka: Ah! He disappeared!

Ashley: Seems like he was born under an accident prone star.

[The party moves on and finds another lever blocked by a wall. Liz is standing dizzy near it.]

Ashley: Another lever!

Lilka: Even if you're faking it, how about noticing the Lizard first?

Ashley: That's true but... Isn't it strange? If there was a pattern, wouldn't he say something unnecessary?

Lilka: Hey, hey! ..... Isn't that risky?

Ashley: Why does that guy, even when he's quiet, make me uneasy?

-> 1. If Ashley uses his Hurl Knife to wake Liz.

Liz: Ahhh! It's so infrequent we're positioned for battle.

-> 2. If Lilka uses her Fire Rod to wake Liz.

Liz: Wow! I'm putting my fate in the hands of this warship.

Liz: Eeee- eeee-...Shock treatment isn't terribly soothing.  
I'm someone who only needs to be told to get it.  
No need to have the experience.

Ashley: I'm glad you're doing so well. It's such a relief.

Liz: Ha, ha, ha, of course. At my death, I hypnotized myself.  
"I can't die now" I said, and look at the result.  
It's sure grand to be alive.

Ashley: I don't care about your joy for living. Just get the lever.

Liz: Why do I get treated so rudely? Judgement day is just around  
the corner! You'll get yours then.

[Liz flips the lever and re-joins the group.  
Finally, they find the Germatron in a chest nearby.]

Ashley: These are the Germatron crystals Irving talked about.

Liz: Yes indeed, this is the Germatron I've been searching for.  
The mail order ones from magazines don't begin to compare.  
These are superb, full of magical powers.

Ashley: Irving seems to be trying to use the stones to move something.

Liz: As long as I have Germatron, I can easily make a huge monster.  
That's what I'd do. .... What is it? You don't look  
pleased. It doesn't suit you.

Ashley: That reminds me, why'd you come here?

Liz: Me? Why else would I be here? The Germatron, silly.  
You can't say you didn't know.

Ashley: It's the same for us-- the Germatron.

Liz: Wha...what did you say? My plans to use the Germatron at the  
research lab are ruined. I was to make a grand war monster.

Ashley: So that's it.

Liz: Of course! The problems started when I brought Undines here for  
an experiment. He started acting wild. You guys saved me from  
death, so I owe you, but the Germatron... Never. Or else I'd be  
pursued by dangerous me. This is proof of my loyalty to Odessa.  
.....

Liz: Wow! Isn't this like a secret disclosure?  
There's a traitor among you.

Ashley: It's you. You!

Lilka: Maybe, just maybe I thought that really it might be.

Liz: Whoaaaa! How's that?! It's a move too good to waste for when no one's around. But this might not be the time.

[BOSS: Lead Scientific Researcher (Self-Styled) - Liz  
And his Assistant - Ard]

[The party defeats the Lizardmen.]

Liz: You fiend. If only I had finished the Bulkogidon.

Lilka: Wow! He got up.

Liz: Whoa. Sorry to have troubled you. We're going to say adios here, now that everything's messed up. But we're not running away. And historian would declare this is a brave withdrawal. Enjoy the continuation of your grand adventure. Let's go, Ard!

Ard: Ar...d Ard. Ard...Arrd, A...rd!

[Liz and Ard retreat.]

Ashley: So they're also Odessa.

Brad: It's hard to hold them in contempt.

Lilka: Really. I mean, they've got guys like that in their organization. They've got so much money, it's frightening.

<Call Menu>

Kate: >If you have both crystals, return to Valeria Chateau.

=====

```
#####  
#[1.10] Contacting the Guardians #  
#####
```

~~Valeria Chateau~~

Irving: Aguelite and Geratron! Finally, both types of crystals are ours. With these we can start up the EMMA motor, which is gathering dust in the engine room.

Lilka: Will you tell me what the EMMA motor is?

Marivel: You wouldn't understand the details, but I'll make it easy. It's lost technology that daisy-chains electromagnetic links into perpetual motion. And, don't think it got its name from someone named "Emma" who invented it.

Lilka: No? That's what I had thought...

Marivel: Nooo... Irving. Don't you think you had better get started on getting the EMMA motor working?

Irving: You're right. Good work, everyone. Marivel and I will start our own work now. When the EMMA motor comes on-line, I'll give you your next mission. Rest until then.

Marivel: I want to help, too. This ancient thing will start up in a jiffy. No problem at all. There's not enough time to test it out, but I'm sure she'll work fine... I think.

Brad: I think our next mission has been decided.

Irving: Ok, I'll make it short. As soon as we're ready here, we are going to try contacting the Guardians.

Ashley: Guardians?

Irving: That's right. Contact the mystical Guardians who protect the world, and they may also aid us in battle. We have finally discovered the key to contacting them.

Ashley: Lost technology and Guardians... The scale of battle is increasing. How much will we be able to handle?

Irving: We will handle what we must. If we flinch, everyone in the world will pay a price of pain for our weakness. ARMS must not let this come to pass. We only have a short while, but rest yourselves. Remember the rest is duty, too.

@Lilka: Oh! Are you going to meet Marina again?  
Hmmph... Good luck, anyway.

@Brad: Resting up for your next assignment is a duty, too.

@Marivel: We're working hard now, so those who don't help can leave.

@Irving: Good work on getting the Aguelite and Germatron Crystals.  
Why don't you rest for a little while?

-----  
~~Town of Meria~~

[Ashley heads to the Town of Meria to see his sweetie.  
In there, he see three goons chasing Tony and his buddies.]

Tony: Dude... HELP!!!

Ashley: Three of you against these kids? That doesn't seem fair.  
How about taking me on instead?

[The goons back off a little.]

Ashley: What'd you guys do this time?

Tony: Young AMRS didn't do anything to piss anyone off!

Scott: In my humble opinion... These hoodlums seem to be after Tim.  
Arrghh!

Ashley: Tim, huh? ... That means they must be...

[The goons run away.]

Ashley: Come back and fight, cowards!



[The communicator beeps.]

Kate: >This is Kate. I've spotted a huge flying object over the Town of Meria! It registers the same heat and size as the flying machine at Mt. Keltepekio Siltolingelon!

Ashley: That was the flying machine Varukisas! Damn! It's too soon for the next action!

Kate: >Excuse me?

Ashley: It's nothing. Never mind. We can't touch Odessa as long as they keep their forces airborne like that!

Irving: >There's a way to get them.

Ashley: Irving! Do you have a plan?

Irving: >Well, it hasn't been tested, so I'm not 100% sure... But then, this is no time to sweat the details, eh?

Ashley: Alright. I'll leave it to you to get us out of this mess.

Irving: >First, hurry back to the Valeria Chateau. Let the Town of Meria Air War begin!

[Varukisas can be seen flying over Meria. Inside, in the control room...]

Ptolomea: Making an appearance like this, isn't bad, is it?

Antenora: Come again? Our mission is to capture the Pillar. I wish you'd not stir things up just for the heck of it.

Ptolomea: You don't have to tell me. Those monsters in the cage are taken care of, right?

Odessa Soldier: The de-freezing of Alphael will be completed in 3 minutes.

Ptolomea: Finish it immediately! You've got 2 minutes!

Antenora: Ptolomea! I already told you what our goal is!

Ptolomea: To acquire the "Pillar", right! Forget it. We'll let the monsters loose in town to cause havoc, then grab the Pillar.

Antenora: Will it really work?

Odessa Soldier: De-freezing is complete. We're ready to go!

Ptolomea: Umph! Go stir up some trouble!

[Varukisas releases a monster down to the Town of Meria.]

[Meanwhile, Ashley returns to Valeria Chateau.]

Ashley: Lilka! Brad!

Lilka: Ashley!

Ashley: Varukisas is in the sky above the Town of Meria!  
Irving is supposed to have a plan for interception, so I rushed here.

Lilka: We haven't heard any details, but... We are supposed to gather immediately in the Chateau's Area 51.

Ashley: Area 51? Wasn't that...?

Brad: The forbidden zone. I guess it's free now.

Ashley: I wonder what Irving is starting?

[The place starts to crumble.]

[Irving can be seen commanding inside the Chateau's command center.]

Irving: Maximum output from the EMMA motor! Intercept enemy at full speed!

Kate: Understood! Only 330 until the EMMA motor reaches its limit. All indicators are clear!

Amy: We're good to go. Everything is as it was in the simulation. What a great job I'm doing! Kate's doing alright, too.

Kate: Don't say things like that! Are you trying to distract me? You just watch the balancer!

Amy: Ohh!

[The party enters.]

Ashley: Irving! What is this?

Irving: The Valeria Chateau's secret. We'll use this to intercept 'em.

Ashley: I should have expected something crazy like this! What should we do?

Irving: You are now free to use the deck. Intercept them there.

Ashley: OK!

Irving: Full speed ahead! The battle will soon begin over the Town of Meria!

[The landmass where the Valeria Chateau is standing separates from the earth. The Chateau's floating in the sky. Meanwhile, the party heads to the deck and encounters...]

[BOSS: Progenitor Bird with Wings of Light - Alphael]

[The party kills the Progenitor Bird.]

-----  
[In the Town of Meria...]

Tony: What's going on, anyway? First me, then Tim gets kidnapped?!

Why would anyone kidnap us? No one would pay our ransom.  
The world's gone nuts!

Tim: So were they really trying to kidnap me or what?

[ARMS appears.]

Ashley: Is sure looks like a distinct possibility.

Tim: Ashley!

Ashley: I just found out myself. I'm just as surprised. Tim...  
Someone must be after your secret powers.

Tony: Dude! Is that true? Wait a sec. That...

Lilka: The Varukisas... Odessa withdrew as soon as we defeated that  
monster, right? Of course, it's still too early to draw  
conclusions.

Ashley: What we have to focus on now is protecting Tim.  
I want you to come to Valeria Chateau with us.

Tim: ... By "my powers", you mean the powers from my Medium?  
..... Alright. Let's do it.

[The party leaves. Tim stops for a while and takes a look at his friends,  
then follows ARMS.]

[The party heads to Valeria Chateau. In there, Irving explains  
to Tim the power that he holds.]

Tim: The power to awaken the Guardians... I have that power?  
..... And there are people who want to use me to get at  
the Guardian's power?

Irving: We want to protect you so that your power doesn't get misused.

Tim: I don't understand it all, but I know I'm scared.

Irving: You're scared because you don't know the extent of your power.  
Let's go together to where you were born. Your fears will go  
away if we can learn something.

Tim: My hometown - where I lived with my mother... I understand.  
Please... Take me there. Wait one second.

Irving: There's no need to worry about your friends in the Town of Meria.  
We can explain everything afterwards. You will be able to see  
them again.

Tim: OK...

Irving: Valeria Chateau, full speed ahead! To the village of the  
Baskars, protectors of the Guardians!

[Meanwhile, inside one of Valeria Chateau's guest rooms, Tony and  
Scott seem to have snuck in.]

Tony: Now how do we meet Tim?

Scott: In my opinion, you use the common term, we're merely "stowaways"!

Tony: No matter how you look at it, we're stowaways! That doesn't matter! What matters is helping out Tim! We know he needs us!

Scott: That's true, but... In my humble opinion, if they find us, we'll be lucky to get off with 100 lashes.

Tony: Just don't think about that. Think about getting us food. I'm so hungry they'll hear my stomach!

-----

[TUTORIAL]: \*To move the Valeria Chateau forward, press the up directional button or the (X) button. To turn, press the left or right directional buttons or the [L1][R1] buttons. Ashley's party can board and deplane only at the Landing Pad in the field. Touch the Landing Pad and press the (O) button to see a choice for descending from the Chateau. Touch the Landing Pad and press the (X) button to board.

@Kate: I'm Kate Lindbergh. We've met before, haven't we? Amy and I are the operators. We're also both telepaths.

@Amy: Tada! It's me, Amy Fairchild! The face behind the voice you know and love so well! You can call me "A".

@Gabacho: I'm Gabacho, chief engineer of Valeria Chateau. I ran a butcher shop before I joined the service. I joined ARMS to help out during the crisis. Pleased to meet ya.

@Altaecia: My brother told me once... about a windswept cave far to the northwest, by a Landing Pad no one knows about. It seems Filgaia still has many mysterious places that are yet unexpected.

@Scott: In my humble opinion... Tim should be left in the care of this castle.

@Tony: Nya nya! I stowed away!

A@Tony: Hey, dude! Thanks so much for rescuing Tim from the kidnappers!

@Irving: What's wrong? Speed is the key to success in battle!

-> 1. Where's Baskar Village?

Irving: It's a "hidden village", so it must be deep in the woods. We must scout the area.

-> 2. I just came to chat

Irving: So Valeria Chateau is ready to take the fight to Odessa. My crew and I are ready to battle Odessa! But still... I wonder if it was right to involve my kid sister, Altaecia, in all of this. I don't want Altaecia to see the savagery that war brings out in people.

<Call Menu>

Erwin: >Ohhh. I am master of the skies. Call on me when you wish to fly. Ohhh.

---

[As soon as ARMS lands on the Landing Pad near Baskar, Irving contacts them.]

Irving: >Hidden in a Forest are the Guardian-worshipping Baskar. Their village, Baskar Village, is so well-hidden it's known as the Hidden Town. I only know that it's around here somewhere. I'm afraid you'll have to search on foot.

[ARMS finds and enters Baskar. Irving and Tim are with the party, as well.]

~~Baskar Village~~

Tim: This is my hometown.

Irving: Yes... The home of the Baskars... heirs to the ancient tradition of worship for the "Guardians". ...And where you were born 12 years ago.

Tim: But I don't remember it all... My earliest memories are traveling with my mother far away from here.

Irving: First, I would love to hear about Tim's birth. Let's go talk to the Village Chief. Feel free to wander around the village, Tim. There might be clues somewhere...

[ARMS heads to the house of the Village Chief, leaving Tim to wander around the village.]

Village Chief: You have done well in coming here. As you say, Tim is a child of this village. Tim is definitely the child of Sabrina the Guardian sorceress.

Village Chief: Sabrina, the Guardian sorceress, inspired us. She fell in love with a visiting Merc and bore his child. The child was given the name of Tim, and was loved by all until he was 3. Then... ..Sabrina changed drastically when she learned that her love died from injuries sustained on a mission. Finally Sabrina took her child and left one night. We were all overcome with grief.

Ashley: Sabrina... She died in the Town of Meria. That much we know. After that, Tim continued living there.

Village Chief: Yes, that much of the story we ourselves know as well. For over the years we have looked long and hard for Tim.

Lilka: Why did you care so much?

Irving: Did you know that Tim might become a "Pillar" as well?

Village Chief: How...how do you know so much? Tim is one of the few left who has the inborn ability to become a "Pillar".

Lilka: By "Pillar" you mean...

Village Chief: The "Pillars" embody the power of the Guardians. It is plain to see that Tim has inherited this ability from Sabrina. But in this village, there is another who also has this ability... You shall meet her soon...

[Meanwhile Tim wanders in the village.]

Tim: Irving and them still seem to be talking. Let's look around the village a little bit more and see if anything stirs up memories.

[Tim explores the village and comes by a house where there is something shining on a table. Tim checks the shining object.]

Tim: This... it's just like the one my Mom had.

Girl with a Soft Voice: ...who are you?

[Tim looks surprised as a girl enters the house. The object falls on the floor.]

Girl with a Soft Voice: Ohh...

[Tim and the Girl starts searching for the fallen object.]

Girl with a Soft Voice: (Who is this boy? He's a stranger. I've never seen a boy my own age before. What should I say to him? I don't know. Maybe say Hi? That would be the normal thing to do. They say first impressions are important. I don't know. How can I be so nervous...?)

[The girl finds the object and places it back on the table.]

Tim: Thank you. My name is Tim. What is your name?

Girl with a Soft Voice: (See! While you were busy worrying what to say, HE said something first. Just be a bit braver...)

[The girl says her name is Colette.]

Colette: ...Nice to meet you.

[Tim goes near Colette but suddenly a ball light appears between them.]

Tim: That light...! ...You...! Why are Colette and the Mediums calling to each other...?

[The Village Chief appears.]

Village Chief: Because Colette is a "Pillar" just like you, Tim. I am glad that you have finally come home, Tim.

[Everyone gathers inside the Village Chief's house.]

Tim: ..... What is the power of the Mediums?

Village Chief: They BECOME a Medium through which the Guardians' power materializes! Possessing the nature and ability of the "Pillar" is necessary to bring this about.

Irving: But you call Tim an "heir". What does that mean?

Village Chief: That's right. Tim is not yet a "Pillar". In order to fully realize his potential as a "Pillar", he must undergo the trial.

Tim: Undergo a trial to become the "Pillar" ...? I can't do that... Not me...

Lilka: Is the trial...dangerous?

Village Chief: There are many monsters at the trial arena... Also...if it happens that Tim isn't fit to be "Pillar", then he won't be able to contain the power. If that happens...

Tim: .....

Ashley: Tim will... Is there truly a need to ask so much of one so young? If he receives more training first, maybe he'll have a better chance... Or, is there a reason why Tim must become a "Pillar" immediately?

Village Chief: The village dream-seer saw a "dream". The "dream-seer" is an oracle. He sees the will of the Guardians in the form of dreams. The "vision" he had was one of "the sky being gnawed away". We don't know if this was a good or an ill omen... It might be too late when we find out, though, so it would behoove us to awaken the "Pillar" now. The danger might be so great that our only salvation would be the power of the Guardians.

Lilka: "The sky being eaten away" ... I wonder if it could be Odessa?

Irving: It's too early right now to know anything for certain. There is too much we don't know about events that are too important...

Village Chief: In order to realize their potential as "Pillar", they must desire it. ...For they must open their hearts to the Guardians. We cannot force it on anybody. It all depends on the will of Tim himself...

Tim: But I can't...

Village Chief: ..... There is no other choice then... Colette must become a "Pillar" as originally planned. Colette doesn't make as good as a "Pillar" as Tim. ...There is no other way. We MUST secure the power of the Guardians!

Ashley: If Colette is not favored by the Guardians...

Village chief: ...Then that is a fate we all must accept.

Tim: ...It's OK... I will do it. I will become the heir. I will take the trial instead of Colette.

Ashley: Tim...

Irving: This is not a spur-of-the-moment decision. Are you sure?

Tim: The surest way is for me to take the trial, right? Also...I don't want to put Colette in any danger. There is something I have to do to get the power of the Guardians, and I have to do it now. You've all protected me enough. Now I can do something

myself. You have no idea how happy that makes me...to finally find my place in things. This is my hometown, right? I can stay here if I become "Pillar", right?

Brad: .....

Irving: If that's what you have chosen, then nobody can go against it.

Ashley: Is there anything we can do to help Tim out?

Village Chief: At the depths of the trial arena is a shrine to the Guardians... Normally only those who are heirs are allowed inside the walls. But anyone can go as far as the point of entry without fear. I ask you this favor: please help the heir to the "Pillar".

Tim: Would it be permitted?

Irving: In that case, I will make it an official order. ARMS must do everything in its power to help Tim, the heir of the "Pillar". We can expect either Odessa or monsters to attack. We will be ready!

Ashley: Understood!

Irving: Now we have nothing to worry about, I guess...

Village Chief: In that case, please rest for today. Tomorrow when everything is ready I will show you to the trial arena.

[The next day, they are about to go to the trial arena when they see Colette waiting at the village entrance.]

Colette: I've been given the duty of showing you the way to the trial arena. The entrance to the trial arena is hidden in the middle of the forest south of the village. There is no identifying mark, so be careful not to miss it!

[The party exits Baskar Village.]

-----  
~~Hidden Trial Arena~~

Colette: Here's the entrance. This is as far as I am able to guide you.

Brad: This is the Temple of the Guardians. So this is the Trial Arena for testing the "Pillar" ...

Ashley: And... the chosen candidate is...

[Everyone stares at Tim.]

Tim: .....

Colette: In the back of the temple is a hall called the "Wall". The knights protecting the candidate can go that far. But, on the other side of the "Wall"...



Tim: It's just me alone, right?

Lilka: Everyone has times when they're all alone. Just because it's someone you really like, doesn't mean you can be together all the time. Even if it's really hard, you'll just want to get through it OK. You're a guy. You should be more upbeat. I don't know what this test is, but think of it as something positive that gets you ahead. Right!

Tim: Yes, you're right.

Lilka: If your energy level is up for it, you can do anything. It's almost like magic.

Ashley: Don't worry. We'll protect you.

Tim: It's something I choose to do, so I can't be glum about it. Thank you very much. I'm fine now.

[Tim faces Colette.]

Tim: Don't worry about me. I'm off now.

Colette: (Is it OK? They're leaving. I heard it's a dangerous place. Maybe I'll never see 'em again. I'm so spaced. Is it all right for me to stand up? There's no excuse really. Is there something I should be saying now... something that'll make them like me. I remember seeing that in a book. I'm not sure anymore.)

Colette: Wait. There's a field of flowers nearby. It's a beautiful field of flowers no one knows about. Huh? What am I talking about?

Tim: I'd like to go there. When we get back, I'd like you to show me the flowers.

Colette: ..... Yes, then I'll be waiting. I'll be waiting right here for you to come back.

[They head north into the trial arena.

They find some cute floating creature waiting for them.]

Sub-Spirit: I've been waiting. So you're the "Heir". You know. You can get your soul to communicate with the sleeping "Old Ruler" Guardians.

Tim: Who are you?

Sub-Spirit: ...? Oh, that's right. You all find it inconvenient when there's no clear name for an existent being.

Pooka: It's Pooka. It's Pooka's Pooka!

Tim: What? What? What? I don't understand.

Pooka: Among the various Sub-Spirits, Pooka is special. The sense of "self" is weak. Hmm...I can't explain it well. In other words... Pooka is Pooka. And at the same time, there's something else. Do you understand?

Lilka: Ah...Um...

Ashley: Oh, in other words, it's that, right?

Tim: I'm sorry. I didn't understand it all.

Brad: I've heard of the Sub-Spirit Pooka. Because the sense of "self" is weak by taking on other information matrixes, one can copy other forms.

Pooka: That's it! That's exactly what I was trying to say. That one is none other than Pooka!

Tim: Um, I'm Tim but...Why was the Sub-Spirit waiting for me?

Pooka: Pooka's role is to guide you under the Guardian's direction. Come with us, Tim. The Guardians want you before it's too late! When Pooka's power is needed use ([]) to call him. For places you can't get to, Pooka can search it for you.

Tim: I might be in the way, but please let me fight too. Last night, I heard from the Village Chief that I'm a Zoa Priest like my mother. By defeating monsters, I'm able to extract power from the Medium I'm equipped with. I want to pass the trial. I want to be strong too! So please, give me a chance.

[They move on.]

Tim: ...! I feel like I've been pierced. It feels as if the wills here on the grounds are gathering.

Pooka: Do you feel it? Those are the vibrations of the Guardians. Their wills turn into vibrations searching for powerful shapes. This is one of the trials too!

[The place starts shaking.]

Tim: Bad senses can't feel the hostility in these vibrations. But! Watch out. They're testing us.

[BOSS: Compound Plant Monster - Reguleus]

[ARMS kills the Compound Plant Monster.]

Ashley: Was that the "trial"? That monster was a Guardian?

Pooka: That wasn't a Guardian. The old rulers of Filgaia, the first Guardians, had absolutely no power in the physical world.

Lilka: Then what was that just now? Even we were attacked by it!!

Pooka: It was probably just testing... ..not only the "Pillar" but also the strength of the knights protecting the "Pillar".

Ashley: You've driven it away. The trial...

Tim: No. It doesn't look like it's over yet. There's a voice calling to me. In order for me to become the "Pillar", I guess I have to go even further.

[They continue on and reaches the Wall.]

\*He who is not fit to be the "Pillar" shall not pass.  
The "Heir to the Pillar" will take the test alone.

Pooka: The "Wall" must start here. What waits on the other side is...

Tim: ...my "Trial".

Pooka: Yes. The ability to materialize the powers of the guardians which are now only consciousness. For your trial, you must get hold of the "Combine". With Pooka.

Tim: Pooka and I?

Pooka: Didn't I say at the start? I said, "Go together". Tim and Pooka must be together at all times. I want everyone to hand over their Mediums. The Medium is the petrified version of the Guardian's information matrix. For the "Combine", it's essential to have a Medium.

[Pooka takes the party's Mediums.]

Tim: Combine? So this is the other power concealed in the Medium which mom told me about.

Pooka: Go, Tim.

[Tim goes past the "Wall".]

Tim: This light... The Medium "Odoryuk" is shining again.

Pooka: Listen to the light. Tim, you can do it. You are the "heir".

Tim: It's real. I hear a voice.

Odoryuk: You're the one who's turned our will into power. You, designated as "heir", state your name.

Tim: Tim. My name is Tim Rhymeless!

Odoryuk: Your blood becomes my will. Your flesh becomes my power.

Tim: My blood? Flesh? What in the world!?

Odoryuk: You, burdened with the fate of death...go forth and overcome it!  
The unending trial has awakened us!

[BOSS: Transforming Ninja Monster - Gehenna Neros]

Pooka: Release at once all the force you've saved until level 2!  
The information matrix of the Medium will let Pooka change into a powerful shape. The user's force and Pooka's ability to transform, released together, form a "Combine". First take the Guardians who have offensive powers like "Grudiev"-- and equip them in the GUARD slot. Pooka and Tim can put in motion a "Combine". Just leap over any trial that's in the way!

[Tim defeats Gehenna Neros.]

Odoryuk: Thou hast evaded our illusions. It is the power of the "heir".  
Tim, you cheated death. The proof is here. Thou art the "heir".  
By releasing us, the "Pillar" becomes an offering proffered  
soundly, very soundly. We await thy next "Pillar". An eclipse  
will fill Filgaia's sky. Thou wilt stand at the Sacrificial  
Altar to deter this menace.

[Tim acquires the Force: "Combine."]

Tim: Did I pass the trial? I actually passed the trial, didn't I?!  
I can't believe it.

Pooka: Better believe it. Make no mistake, your power of belief guided  
reality. You realized "truth".

Tim: I passed the trial. It's like a dream. But... I'm so happy!  
My heart's pounding!

Pooka: Even Pooka is excited. It's as if Pooka caught Tim's excitement.  
I'm so excited!

Tim: I want to hurry and get back to the others! I want the others to  
feel my excitement!

[Tim returns to where he left Ashley and the others.]

Ashley: Tim! Pooka!

Lilka: I'm so glad. You're safe. We were all nervous waiting here.

Brad: So you passed the trial to become the "heir"?

Tim: Yes! It seems I passed. But it still doesn't feel real.  
My pounding heart is the only thing that feels different.

Ashley: You did well, Tim. I'm getting excited now too.

Lilka: Boy, this excitement really is catching.

Tim: Yep! Sure seems that way!

Pooka: It's time to give you the powers Tim got by passing the trial.  
Part of the power sustaining Filgaia, the Guardian's power, can  
be realized through Pooka. This is the "Combine"! For the  
"Combine", everyone's force is needed. It's a joint effort  
which, using our force, allows Pooka to duplicate the Guardian's  
shape and abilities. So, we need to remember that this trick  
can be used only when Pooka's with us.

[Ashley, Lilka, and Brad acquire the Force: "Combine."]

[The party returns to the entrance.]

Tim: Colette!

Colette: Tim!

Tim: It's over.

[Colette grabs Tim's hand and takes him to the secret flower field.]

Tim: Wow! It's really amazing! I understand why you'd want to show someone.

Colette: Yep. .... But I haven't shown anyone yet.

Tim: Huh?

Colette: You are the first.

[Tim sits down with Colette.]

Colette: You took the test for me, right?

[Tim looks away.]

Tim: That's not true.

Colette: Do you think so?

Tim: .....

Colette: That's why I wanted to show you the thing most important to me. Because flowers are their prettiest in that moment.

Tim: Thank you.

[Colette moves a little bit away from Tim.]

Colette: I wish the flowers would stay pretty like this forever and ever.

[Tim goes nearer to Colette.]

Tim: I wish it could always be like this forever and ever.

Colette: Yep.

-----  
~~Baskar Village~~

Villager 1: You did it, Tim! You were accepted as a "Pillar"!

Villager 2: I knew that any child of Sabrina's could do it.  
I'm sure she'd be happy... You should be proud!

Colette: .....

Village Chief: Tim! You did well! This is a gift from all of us.  
Accept it as a token of our appreciation!

[The party acquires 10 Heal Berries, 3 Big Berries, and a Mega Berry.]

Village Chief: I am sure the trial has exhausted you.  
Take a well-earned rest.

[That night, Tim is seated on a bed.]

Tim: I survived the trial... I have the power to call the Guardians... Ha ha ha ha! I'm so excited I can't sleep!

[Tim goes downstairs. He overhears the villagers talking.]

Village Chief: The ceremony went according to plan.

Man 1: That means that we have a new "Pillar"!

Man 2: Just as we foresaw, it had to be someone of Sabrina's blood.

Village Chief: At last we have the "Pillar", safe-keeping the power of the Guardians! Because today we again have the "Pillar", the world will be safe no matter what the vision meant.

Tim: ("Pillar"? "Sacrifice"? What are they talking about?)

Villager: It all started the day Sabrina ran away from the village so her son wouldn't become "Pillar..." For ten long years since we have scoured Filgaia for that boy.

Village Chief: But now, it is over. The life Tim is in hand, and with it Filgaia will be protected. A life whose purpose is to die...

Tim: (Die? Me? I don't understand...)

[Pooka appears from upstairs.]

Pooka: Didn't you know? Today your life was offered to the Guardians as "Pillar". That's strange... Didn't you know all this before going to the trial arena? The trial to become "Pillar..." It is to give your life to the Guardians.

Tim: Die? Me? That can't be... No...I'm scared...  
...I don't want to die! How can they all be so casual about it!?

Village Chief: Who is it? Who's there?

[The Baskars surround Tim.]

Village Chief: Tim - Were you listening?

Tim: Am I to die, then? Do I really have to die?

Village Chief: ..... Yes, Tim. You must accept your destiny as "Pillar", as the sacrifice. If you don't, the world will pay a terrible price... There are people you want to protect in this world, right? This is the only way. There are times when SOMEONE must be sacrificed! Please understand, Tim... You have to die for Filgaia.

Man 1: I have a family! The world can't perish, or else...  
I'm begging you...please die!

Man 2: Little Tim...we need your life! Give it to us, or Filgaia dies!

Village Chief: Please die!

Man 1: You must die!

Tim: Ahhhh...

Man 2: You must give your life for all our sakes...

Village Chief: You will die.

Man 1: Die!

Man 2: ...Die...!

-----  
[Tim is in one of Valeria Chateau's guest room. Meanwhile, ARMS, Colette and The Village Chief are all gathered in the parlor.]

Ashley: What in the world?! How can you sacrifice a child?!  
I won't let you get away with this!

Irving: Calm down, Ashley.

Ashley: How do you expect me to?! Don't you care about life at all?!

Village Chief: Yes, life... With Tim's one life, the lives of everyone in Filgaia will be saved. There's nothing else to do.

Lilka: The ends are worth such a sacrifice. But...that's...  
...that's just like Odessa!

Village Chief: ..... Our only choice is to make Colette a new  
"Pillar", a new Guardian.

Ashley: How will that solve anything!?

[The alarm sounds.]

Irving: What...!

Kate: >No. 2 bulkhead has been breached! Someone is invading Valeria Chateau!

Village Chief: Don't look at me!

Irving: It's them! The Chateau's hull is made of a specially refined alloy called "De Le Metalica". If someone has broken through a bulkhead and is coming this way...

Kate: >I'm conducting magnetic resonance scan of the interior!

Irving: As you can tell, maybe you should think about escaping.

Village Chief: I don't believe it...

[The Village Chief leaves the room with Colette.]

Irving: If this continues, Baskar Village could be harmed, too!  
Ascend to an elevation of 1800! We'll shut the invaders in!

Ashley: We're going too!

@Irving: The invaders are definitely Odessa. I don't care if you make this Valeria Chateau their grave -- just stop them.

[The screen presents the intruders as shown in a security camera.]

Kate: >We've captured the invaders! A man and a woman.  
They are the enemies.

Judecca: Where shall we begin our fun?

Antenora: They aren't fools. They'll be coming any second.

Judecca: I'll search for the "Pillar" boy. You handle everyone else.

Antenora: ... Judecca--

Judecca: What?

Antenora: Don't kill too many. I hate needless killing.

Judecca: I know, I know...

Antenora: Just confuse 'em... We're after the "Pillar" boy.  
Remember, just confuse 'em!

[Antenora waves to the security camera.]

[Inside a guest room...]

Tony: Something's happened! I'm starting to doubt the safety of this  
ship!

Scott: In my humble opinion... We've stumbled into a war zone.

Tony: And it's about to stumble into us.

Scott: What is that?

Tony: I can't believe we're in this mess.

Scott: In my humble opinion, I wish I hadn't come.

[ARMS heads to where Antenora is.]

Ashley: They're after Tim's power! Let's hurry!

Antenora: On orders of Lord Vinsfeld, we will take the "Pillar" boy.

[BOSS: Special Cocytus Squad Member - Antenora]

Antenora: I bet you never thought your home base would be attacked.  
We found this place easily by tracing Alphael's lingering  
Kirlian energy readings. Which means that all that nonsense with  
Ptolomea wasn't useless, after all.

[ARMS battles Antenora, after some time...]

Antenora: I can't buy any more time. This is enough fun for now.  
Judecca should have the "Pillar" boy by now. My job is done.

[Antenora disappears.]

Lilka: I said wait!



Ashley: First we have to save Tim!

[Tim walks back and forth in a room until the place shakes causing him to be on his knees.]

Tim: I have to die, it seems. If I don't die, there's no point to having lived, anyway. Proof that I was ever here will only come if I am gone. .... I'm scared... I'm so scared...

Voice of Colette: Nooooooo...!

Tim: Colette- I want to protect you...you and everyone else.  
I want to run. I want to run away from it all.  
I want to protect you so that you aren't scared ever again.  
The only thing I can do to help you is...

Tony: Is what? What can you do? It's obvious, isn't it? Run.  
You can do that, right, Tim?

[Tony and Scott enter.]

Tim: Tony...? What are you doing here?

Tony: We wanted to fight with the Dude and the others too.  
So we snuck on board, but that wasn't so smart, was it?

Scott: In my humble opinion, I think we'll just hold you back.

Tony: But you can do something, right? With those powers of yours.

Tim: Tony, I...

Tony: Go fight with the Dude and the others.  
Do it for us, no, for Young ARMS.

Tim: .....

Tony: We're friends, so I'll give you my hand.  
But you'll have to get up on your own, Tim.

[Tim stands.]

Tim: Tony, what should I do?

Tony: Do what you want to. If you do what you really want to, I'm sure you'll find a way to succeed.

Tim: I'm going!!

[Tim leaves.]

Tony: Sock it to 'em! And give the Dude a hand for us, too!

Scott: In my humble opinion... Tim is now a force to be reckoned with.

Tony: Don't be stupid. Tim was always like this. From the beginning, Tim was a force to be reckoned with. If he weren't, he would have never been in Young ARMS in the first place.

[In another room, Judecca points his gun on the Village Chief and Colette.]

Judecca:           The "Pillar" boy. Will you tell me where he is now?  
                  Or would you prefer pain?

Village Chief: I'll never tell you! The "Pillar" exists to aid the world,  
                  not to be your plaything!

Judecca:           Feeble-minded old man.

[A bright light appears between Judecca and the Baskars.]

Judecca:           Wh-What was that?

[The image of Grudiev appears from the light.  
Then, Tim appears between them.]

Village Chief: Was that the Blue Dragon? Grudiev, the Guardian of earth...

Judecca:           Is that the "Pillar" boy?!

Tim:                You'd better get out of here now! If you don't...

Judecca:           If I don't, what?

Tim:                You'll have to face me!

Judecca:           Don't get uppity on me, now. You're the sacrifice, remember?

[BOSS: Special Cocytus Squad Member - Judecca]

Judecca:           I don't feel like playing games, brat. The initial plan was to  
                  capture you, but it looks like I'll have to punish you, too.  
                  Removing your ears wouldn't too severe, I think.  
                  Resistance is futile.

[Tim battles Judecca, after some time...]

Judecca:           I can't believe you have come so far already!

[Ashley's party enters the room.]

Ashley:           Tim! You're safe...

Tim:                Ashley!

Judecca:           Now there are too many of them, and only one of me. Change of  
                  strategy! If the "Pillar" cannot be captured, then destroy him!  
                  Blastodon! Blow them away! Blow up everything!

[Judecca disappears.]

Kate:              >This is Kate. A bomb has been detected in the Valeria Chateau!  
                  The location is the catapult room!

Brad:              I should've known they would have used a bomb like that!

Ashley:            Ok, everyone, let's go! You come with us!  
                  You're part of the group!

[Tim nods.]

[BOSS: Explosive Red Thunder Toad - Blastodon]

[The party heads in the catapult room where Blastodon is waiting.]

Ashley: How dare you! One right after another...!

Brad: Disposal of explosive materials is a very delicate operation! I'll do it after I take care of all of this!

Kate: >Please wait! The search for explosives found them at the same point as the monsters on the warship. It is likely that explosives have been implanted within the monsters' bodies.

Amy: >No, you're wrong! The monsters themselves are the bombs!

Irving: >There's no mistake The scanner detects no metal objects within the monsters' bodies. Detected in the liquids secreted by the monsters is something like a very volatile explosive. In other words, the monsters are living bombs.

Ashley: So they're like the monsters we found in the Withered Ruins.

Lilka: If we beat them, they'll all go KA-BOOM together.

Irving: >Right. But then again, that's what they intended from the start.

Brad: What do you plan on doing? You can't do nothing, can you?

Irving: >Of course not. Section D52 of the warship is equipped with a lever catapult. We'll use that to shoot them off.

Ashley: As always, you sure come up with the craziest ideas.

Irving: >They sure don't look like they'll stay put on top of the catapult. Prepare for battle! First, tire the monster weapons out. After that we'll capture them.

Lilka: Battle preparations... Is it OK to include attacks?

Irving: >There are two points to consider in treating this bomb as a weapon. First is the power of the explosion itself. The other is controlling the explosion. The better made the bomb, the less likely the explosion will be larger than expected.

Ashley: OK, I'll give it a shot. But it's still dangerous. Irving, you need to take cover.

Irving: >Unfortunately, I have to refuse. I'm the Chief. As long as you're fighting with us, I can't let you leave here. I believe in you all. That's why I want you to accomplish your marvelous plan.

Ashley: You "believe in us." Roger! If someone believes in us, it means we'll perform even better than our efforts.

[The party battles Blastodon, after a while...]

Irving: >We've confirmed the lowering of the monster weapon's bio-patterns. All soldiers, evacuate! EM Cage catapult, stand-by!

Kate: >Start EM Cage No. 1 & 2. Continue with No. 3 & 4.

Amy: >Keep going!!!

Irving: >All soldiers, evacuate the catapult! Shoot the target warship!

Kate: >Start the countdown! 10, 9, 8, 7...

[Blastodon looks like it'll explode soon.]

Brad: Blew it!

[Ashley gets on the catapult with Blastodon.]

Irving: >Stop! Get away from the catapult!

Ashley: You believed, so it can't end like this!

Amy: >Zero Count! Release the catapult!

Lilka: Ashley!!!

[The catapult releases with Ashley and Blastodon on it.]

Ashley: Ohhhh!!!!!! Access.

[The catapult is released to the skies, where it explodes.]

-----

[On a beach, Irving is seen helping Ashley walk.]

Ashley: I'm all right. I can walk on my own.

Irving: Don't talk.

Ashley: Is that an order?

Irving: Yes, it's an order. If you're worried about my body, you're barking up the wrong tree.

Ashley: But...

Irving: I want to fight alongside you.

Ashley: .....

Irving: I want to fight with you despite my body in this shape. My desire to protect Filgaia won't be surpassed by anyone.

Ashley: I am able to fight. You already are.

Irving: Thank you.

Ashley: That's so unlike you...

[Lilka runs toward them.]

Lilka: Everyone, hurry up! This way! Over here!

[Tim and Brad comes. Lilka seems to be complaining to Ashley.]

Irving: (Under unconscious control...does it mean it's started stabilizing? ..... Or is it running out of control?)

-----  
[Inside the Village Chief's house, in Baskar Village...]

Village Chief: This is wonderful! Tim is the perfect "Pillar".  
With abilities as great as his, he will certainly be able to manifest the power of the Guardians!

Tim: Please wait! NO! I don't want to die!

Village Chief: Tim...

Tim: But I want to do something for Filgaia... I want to protect the people I love... That's why I want to fight. That's why I want to live... to fight. People say "die", but I'm not so weak as to want to die.

Irving: We are trying to include Tim in ARMS. Do the people of Baskar have a problem with that?

Village Chief: No...I think it's fine... It would be meaningless for the "Pillar" to die before his time. If the "Pillar" doesn't give his life on his own volition, the power of the Guardians won't be released.

Irving: And that great power will be the salvation of all...  
If you truly want to protect that which you love, then lend us your strength!

Tim: I don't want to die without being able to do anything!  
I'm begging you... Lend us your power to protect that which needs protecting!

Irving: In that case, come back with us to Meria Boule.  
The next battle awaits ARMS.

[Tim, Colette and the Village Chief are left in the house.]

Tim: I don't want to die. I don't want anyone to die.  
So take care, Chief. And you too, Colette. I will be back.  
This is my home, right...?

[Tim and Colette leave.]

Village Chief: Will you ever be able to forgive me, Tim?  
My daughter Sabrina, will your son be able to forgive me?

=====  
#####

[ARMS is gathered in Meria Boule Castle's audience room.]

King of Meria Boule: You have done well.

Irving: I have done almost nothing. It is these fellows here who deserve the real credit, I believe.

King of Meria Boule: Yes, indeed. You have my gratitude, too.  
Come now, relax, I say... You are all heroes!  
Your deeds exceed even my own!

Irving: The king likes to jest. Don't be afraid to play along.

King of Meria Boule: Now then, let us discuss Sir Irving's proposal.

Irving: Did you consider it, Sire?

King of Meria Boule: I did. If Odessa means to wage war on a global scale, then we require the same capabilities.

Irving: Therefore, Sire, we...

King of Meria Boule: I know we must fight Odessa on a global scale. But ARMS is limited by the many restrictions places on its authority. To fight Odessa effectively, we must resolve the various issues between nations.

Ashley: Please, Sire, I must say... If we keep fighting Odessa the way we have been, they will gain the upper hand.

King of Meria Boule: I am aware of that. But your chief has given me a very good idea.

Irving: He suggested that we hold another Filgaia Summit.

King of Meria Boule: There, our Meria Boule, Sylvaland, and Guild Galad... will gather to discuss what the 3 nations can do about the terrorist problem. After the incident in Sylvaland, even stubborn Guild Galad will have to attend. Sir Irving...

Irving: Yes, Sire?

King of Meria Boule: We need a secure site at which to hold a summit. A gathering of the 3 nations' leaders would present an inviting target.

Irving: Don't worry, Sire. I know the safest place in all Filgaia.

King of Meria Boule: And where would that be?

Irving: It's not on the ground... it's in the sky! I propose holding the 71st Filagaia Summit in the sky, aboard the Valeria Chateau!

King of Meria Boule: I see! It would be the first airborne summit!

Irving: Yes, Sire! Odessa does have Varukisas, but there is no way they could gain advantage over us! And our most dependable troops

will be waiting aboard in case of Odessa does attack.

King of Meria Boule: Yes, I see!

Irving: I give you a new mission! I order ARMS to protect the 71st Filgaia Summit! An attack on the summit by Odessa is conceivable. The objective of this mission is to protect the leaders in the event of such an attack. ... That is all!

-----

[The time for the Filgaian Summit arrives. The King of Meria Boule, the Queen of Sylvaland, the Guild Galad Master, and Irving gather inside the Valeria Chateau conference room.]

Irving: So the Guild Galad Master does not think that...

Guild Galad Master: I won't have it! It's wrong! Wrong I say!

King of Meria Boule: Impulsive, aren't we? Then again, you always were.

Guild Galad Master: Why are you so calm about it? Haven't you thought about what giving ARMS complete cross-border rights means? It means the strongest fighting force will have no limits. They can go anywhere! They're just terrorists with legal backing, which will make them even harder to dispose of!

Queen of Sylvaland: They are not terrorists. Their actions are just. We think it is erroneous to mistake the two.

Guild Galad Master: That just means they're fooling you! Aren't you mistaking good-naturedness for virtue?

Queen of Sylvaland: I don't think...

Irving: Let us ask the Guild Galad Master, then. What steps do you intend to take against these?

Guild Galad Master: Each country must strengthen their armed forces. That's the only way. However strong terrorists get, our ability to defend ourselves must be greater. Peace through superior strength.

King of Meria Boule: You are underestimating their fighting ability. You will not understand until you see it for yourself.

Guild Galad Master: They can only be so strong! With our skill, we at Guild Galad could easily bring them to their knees!

King of Meria Boule: You know the Treaty of Iscariot was to limit military strength.

Guild Galad Master: We are faced with an emergency! Forget the Treaty! Doesn't this Valeria Chateau itself violate the Treaty?

Irving: There are no arms aboard the Chateau. Just ARMS itself.

Queen of Sylvaland: You're ideas are dangerous. Such thoughts will not make me forget the kingdom engulfed in salt.

King of Meria Boule: Will you follow in Slayheim's footsteps?

Guild Galad: Why you...

[Irving's communicator rings.]

Irving: We're in the middle of the summit.

Kate: >I'm sorry, but this is an emergency! There is a thermal energy source on the radar that may be the enemy aircraft Varukisas! 500 until contact!

King of Meria Boule: Is the enemy attacking?

Queen of Sylvaland: That is regrettable.

Guild Galad Master: Wh-what will you do!? You just said you had no weapons on board! How will you face them!?

Irving: We expected Odessa to come during the summit. Why don't you take this opportunity to observe our close-combat skills?

King of Meria Boule: We're depending on you!

Queen of Sylvaland: Ashley, do your best.

Guild Galad Master: I can't believe you all are so calm!!  
Do you know how much danger we're in!?

King of Meria Boule: That is true... But I have also seen ARMS in action. Whining about it won't help the situation. We must leave it to them, Guild Galad Master.

-----  
Irving: All soldiers, 1st Battle Formations immediately! Now the ship will launch an ambush on the enemy's Gull Wing-class Flying Machine! Ashley, Brad, Lilka and Tim will storm the plane's interior with the assault anchor. Our central goal is to completely silence the Flying Machine's battle capabilities. After the mission, return to the Anchor quickly. After recovery, the mission will be complete. Currently, our plane are flying at 0800 SW of Halmetz. In other words, we're over the middle of the ocean. No need to worry for those below. We must destroy the enemy Gull Wing class Flying Machine here and now. It's a perfect opportunity to destroy the enemy's power. We must win this battle! Over!

[The Chateau readies the Assault Anchor.]

Soldier A: Send the No. 16 Assault Anchor! Don't be late! Those that blow their chance don't live long in the field!

Soldier B: Ashley's group is all aboard. Begin injecting the buffer gel.

Soldier C: Direction confirmed! Distance modification complete!  
All green here!

Soldier D: Part of the enemy's Gull Wing-class Flying Machine is fixed in the target's range! Trigger preparations complete! Good luck



with the timing!

Soldier E: The rest is up to you! Go give it your all!

[The Assault Anchor releases and connects itself to Varukisas.]

-----  
~~Warwing Varukisas~~

Lilka: Ouch. Ouch. So rough.

Ashley: Are you guys all right?

Tim: I'm OK, I think.

Brad: It looks like I'm OK too.

Irving: >It's me. Sounds like everyone arrived safely.

Lilka: Is this what you call "safe"?

Irving: >If you can complain like that, you must be OK. Now for the next mission-- You have two tasks. One is to silence the enemy's Flying Machine Varukisas. The other is... all of you to safely escape out of there.

Ashley: Aside from the first task, I hope to manage the second.

Irving: >After you disrupt the plane's power functions, come back here promptly. Winding back the assault anchor will help us retrieve you guys.

Ashley: In other words, we've got to ride this on our return? OK. Ok. After completing the mission, return here. And be sure to recover the anchor.

Irving: >From now on, I'll take the comfort of your ride into consideration. Over and Out.

[ARMS shuts the three power plants and tries to go back to the anchor however...]

Voice of Ptolomea: Hang on there. I just can't let you go on home.

[Ptolomea comes down from an elevator.]

Ashley: Ptolomea!

Ptolomea: Looks like you guys might actually be worthy opponents for a change. They say you beat Judecca. Is this guy the real thing?

Ashley: Our justice will never submit to Odessa!

Ptolomea: Hmm..."Justice". I don't know who came up with that but, "Justice" can be found on any corner. I've got a little in my heart.

Ashley: You said my "Justice" and your "Justice".

Ptolomea: You guys did as you pleased to my favorite Varukisas.  
We have far too many reasons why our swords should cross, right?  
Here I go! You ARMS kids! Show me what your "Justice" can do.

[The party fights Ptolomea.]

Ptolomea: There! I guess this is enough!

Ashley: What's going on?

Ptolomea: The evacuation of the varukisas passengers is almost finished.

Ashley: You're not...You... You were buying time until all the  
passengers were off, weren't you?

Ptolomea: It's pretty tough having to handle soldiers. I was fond of the  
Varukisas, but it's perfect to bury you all in.

[Ptolomea leaves.]

Ashley: Stop! Ptolomea!!

Brad: We need to plan our escape rather than chase him.  
The Varukisas looks like it's not going to last much longer.

Lilka: And we finally had him silenced. One danger passes, only to  
have another danger surface.

Tim: (Did we really silence him?) If the plane crashes, the Valeria  
Chateau connected by the anchor will fall too.

Lilka: Ok, right. So then what are we supposed to do?

Ashley: I've got an idea. You've got to trust me with your lives.

Lilka: But what are we going to do?

Ashley: First, we have to contact Irving at the Chateau.

[ARMS contacts Irving.]

Ashley: It's me, Ashley.

Irving: >You did well. I see black smoke rising from the Varukisas.

Ashley: Yeah, but there's a slight problem. We're still inside  
Varukisas! Release the anchor right away! If you don't release  
it now, the Chateau will crash too!

Irving: >Hmm...

Ashley: I don't know where the Varukisas will crash. The ship could  
cause a major disaster if it crashes here. We must do something.

Irving: >What're you going to do? Can you abandon ship?

Ashley: I'll head for the cockpit... Luckily, we're over the sea.  
Maybe I can belly-land the Varukisas on the water.

Irving: >Are you sure you can do it?

Ashley: I'll give it my best shot. It's our only chance.

Irving: >You can do it! Land that baby and get your butt back here!

[ARMS steps on the elevator Ptolomea came down from and reaches the smoking cockpit.]

Lilka: We'll be OK, right? We'll be able to do something, right?

Brad: This is where my real work starts.

Ashley: You know how to fly?

Brad: The Gull Wing-class Flying Machine Varukisas isn't a bad machine. This plane isn't a plane for terrorists. This plane is...

Brad: Hang on! We're landing in water.

[The Varukisas lands on the water. ARMS is on top of it. The Chateau can be seen flying toward them.]

Lilka: Hey! Hey! Over here! Over here! Hey, wave your hand too, Tim. Go for it, boy!

Ashley: It really saved me.

Brad: Their energy?

Ashley: That may be it.

Lilka & Tim: We're over here!

=====

```
#####  
#[1.12] Data Tablets and Sielje Region #  
#####
```

[In Meria Boule Castle's audience room...]

King of Meria Boule: Hee, hee! Did you see how flustered that old codger from Guild Galad was? Hee, hee!

Irving: I am sure he appreciates the threat posed by Odessa now. He learned his lesson.

King of Meria Boule: Yes, indeed. The attack by Odessa was frightening, but in the end it may have been for the better.

Ashley: May I ask what that means?

Irving: All present saw firsthand just how formidable the enemy is. ... After all, it takes a direct threat for people to get off their fat butts to act.

King of Meria Boule: We have not had good relations with Guild Galad. I worried that they would be the biggest stumbling block at the summit. But the attack lit a fire under their butts. We made more progress than I had expected.

Irving: They are still unwilling to cooperate completely.

King of Meria Boule: But they did provide us with their "Hovercraft".  
Even if the summit gained only that, we should be satisfied.  
You are too hasty. And haste not only makes waste, it can take  
years off your life.

Irving: Yes, Sire.

King of Meria Boule: Very well. Now, then. How will ARMS act next?

Irving: Varukisas was destroyed, but Odessa is not defeated yet.  
Let's track them down. With the Hovercraft, we can search the  
entire Inland Sea area.

King of Meria Boule: Ah, so we shall put the Hovercraft to immediate use.

Irving: We'll look for the data tablets from the Varukisas. A Gull  
Wing-class ship like that should have 3 data tablets onboard.  
Once recovered, the tablets will provide us with vital  
informations about Odessa.

King of Meria Boule: The Hovercraft is docked on the west coast.  
I'm counting on you, ARMS.

<Call Menu>

Amy: >The Inland Sea is strange. The tide there flows to the coast.  
That means the 3 data tablets that fell into the sea may be near  
the shore.

---

[TUTORIAL]: \*Guild Galad has helped link the Map Scope to the Hovercraft's  
onboard terminal. High-altitude satellite images can now be  
displayed on the Map Scope. Now you can see all of Filgaia on  
the monitor, instead of just the surrounding area. To move the  
Hovercraft forward, press the up directional button or the (X)  
button. To rotate, press the left or right directional buttons  
or the [L1][R1] buttons. Ashley's party can board and disembark  
only at the shore. To disembark from the Hovercraft, touch the  
shore and press the (O) button. To board the Hovercraft, touch  
it and press the (X) button.

[ARMS finds and gets all of the 3 data tablets.]

Ashley: All of them now recovered! Contact Irving for our next instructions!

[Ashley contacts Irving.]

Ashley: This is Ashley. All data tablets recovered.  
Requesting further orders.

Irving: >Good job. Now return to Meria Boule Castle immediately.

<Call Menu>

Kate: >Once you get the data tablets, head to Meria Boule Castle.  
The Chief and the King of Meria Boule should be waiting.

-----  
[ARMS returns to Meria Boule Castle.]

King of Meria Boule: We now have all 3 data tablets. How can we get the information from them? The tablets' protective encryption is very difficult to break.

Irving: I want to take them to the Sielje Region for analysis.

Lilka: (Gulp!)

Irving: Sielje technology will be able to open the tablets. ... The problem is getting to Sielje. We can't take Valeria Chateau because there are no landing pads.

Lilka: (... Hmm....) Yes... And there are no overland or sea routes to Sielje.

Irving: Wait... Lilka, aren't you from Sielje originally?

Lilka: Yeah. I came here using a Teleport Gem. Didn't quite work, though. Can't we analyze the tablets some other way, without going to Sielje?

King of Meria Boule: Wait a moment... Somewhere near Damzen City is a tunnel for transporting coal to Sielje, isn't there? Go to Damzen City and ask the miners there. They speak brusquely, but deep down they are warmhearted. I'm sure they will help you.

Irving: Well, let us go look for the tunnel, shall we?

Lilka: (Yikes!)

Irving: I give you a new mission! ARMS! Make haste to Damzen City, and from there, to the Sielje Region! Get any information on Odessa you can from the tablets! I'm counting on you!

-----  
[In Damzen City, ARMS finds information to find a path to Sielje Region.]

@Man in Gunner's Heaven Pub: To get to the Sielje Region from here, Mt. Chug-Chug's underground tunnel is the best bet. The King of Meria Boule really said that? He really did? ..... Mt. Chug-Chug is dead now, so we all thought that the King had abandoned us. So he still remembers us... I'm glad we can be of use again... especially like this. We Damzen city miners will do anything to help you. We'll fight together! First we'll have to free the tunnel. Bring this! It's proof from the King of Meria Boule that I'm the top-man at Mt. Chug-Chug!

[The man hands the Boss Symbol to the party.]

[ARMS heads to Mt. Chug-Chug and examines the door on the east, near the entrance.]

\*It's a transport tunnel to Sielje Region.  
Entry prohibited to all those without the "Boss Symbol".

[They use the Boss Symbol on the door and it disappears. They go through the tunnel and find Sielje Region.]

<Call Menu>

Irving: The Sielje Region is southwest of the tunnel out of Mt. Chug-Chug. You go southwest but it's on the north side of the ridge. South of the ridge is the Gate Bridge.

-----  
~~Sielje Region~~

Ashley: So this is Lilka's home town...

Tim: A town that's inside the force field... How amazing.

Lilka: Yeah. Come on, we have to hurry up and get those tablets analyzed. There's no time to lose.

Tim: What's wrong? You seem nervous.

Ashley: Why don't you leave the tablets to us and go say hello to everyone?

Lilka: No, that's OK. Thanks, anyway.

[A boy comes towards Lilka.]

Magic School's start pupil: I thought you looked familiar. It's you, Lilka! I challenged you to a contest but you stood me up, you runaway!

Tim: What? I didn't know that, Lilka.

Ashley: So, you ran away from home, eh?

Brad: How shocking. What will people say? Hee hee...

Lilka: You've got it all wrong! I didn't run away from home! I'm just... wandering the earth... to perfect my fighting skills.

Magic School's star pupil: If you leave home without permission then it's running away!

Lilka: Well, yeah, but...

Ashley: Alright, that's enough. Don't get into an argument here. Let's see...

Magic School's star pupil: Excuse me, but I haven't introduced myself yet.

[The boy says his name is Terry.]

Terry: Lilka and I were in the same class. We're... friends.

Lilka: Friends? Me, friends with a creep like you? In your dreams! You're just a big jerk!

Terry: How dare you...

Lilka: You were always so stuck up just because you got good grades. And you were always trying to hit on me! Then, when I finally get a better test score than you, you challenge me to a spell showdown. Like I said, you're a big jerk!

Ashley: Come on, knock it off! We didn't come here to argue with people!

Brad: We came here to undo the spell that's protecting the data tablets! We need to see your top scientist.

Terry: I'm sorry about what happened. I recommend that you go to Mr. McGregor's classroom. I'll go ahead and explain the situation. I will see you at the classroom later on. My challenge stands, so don't try to run away, Lilka.

Ashley: See? He's not really a bad person. A little arrogant, but still...

Lilka: Hmph...

[The party heads for the classroom.]

@Terry: Oh, thank you so much for watching after Lilka. I'm sure she's a lot of trouble, but her sister is the "Eleniak Witch-Girl", so please be patient.

L@Terry: I can't believe they let YOU in the special unit. You probably got in because you lied and said you were the "Eleniak Witch-Girl", right?

McGregor: Terry has already briefed me on your situation. Let's get started immediately.

[The communicator beeps.]

McGregor: An Emphatite-based communicator? We must connect it to a Projector. I'll get one now.

[McGregor does as he had said. The image of Irving appears on the Projector.]

McGregor: I will now explain what I did. I shall endeavor to be brief. All 3 data tablets were shielded by an amazingly strong Protect Spell. It impressed even me. But this presented a challenge to me as a scientist. For I...

Terry: Um, you said you'd be brief.

McGregor: Oh, yes, You're quite right. Now, as I was saying... The data tablets contained information about the location of Odessa's hideout. But they are damaged, and a full analysis will take a little longer. Yes, I'd say about... one more day should do it.

Irving: >And as for Odessa's hideout...

McGregor: It would appear to be located at a massive energy plant. Data in the tablets suggest some sort of high-quality energy refinement operation. But why would they choose a place where they risk of being blown to bits in the event of an accident?

Ashley: I believe there is something at the plant that makes it worth the risk.

Irving: >To come to the point, Odessa requires massive amounts of energy. Hmm... This is our chance to finally get the drop on those terrorist pigs. We'll launch a surprise attack and put that plant out of business!

Ashley: A very bold plan, Irving.

Brad: I see. A surprise attack... We'd finally be able to put THEM on the defensive.

Irving: >But we have to pinpoint the plant's coordinates first.

McGregor: Yes, well, as I was saying, I will need one more day. I can't get any additional information out of the tablets without more time.

Irving: >OK. Mr. McGregor. We're counting on you. I suggest you get some rest before tomorrow. You've got a long day ahead of you. OK everyone. Get to your quarters.

[The projection disappears. Ashley, Brad, and Tim leave the room.]

Lilka: (Shutting down the energy plant must mean blowing it up. If so, I've got just the thing for that.)

Terry: Lilka!

Lilka: What do you want?

Terry: This is just too dangerous for you. I think you should drop out. Your magic isn't advanced enough. You could get hurt... or worse. I... don't want to see that happen.

Lilka: You don't have to worry about me. I've done alright so far. I know my grades aren't that hot, but I do well under pressure. The only time I ever got a better test score than you was in an actual spell-casting test, right?

Terry: But there's a chance you might not make it back. I... Besides, you wouldn't be able to take up my challenge. Lilka, you have to accept that you're not as good as your sister!

Lilka: Oh, I hate you!

[Lilka walks away.]

[Inside an inn, Ashley is standing in front of the counter. Lilka comes.]

Lilka: Ashley... Hey, Ashley!

Ashley: What do you want at this time of night?

Lilka: I need you to go somewhere with me. It won't take long.

Ashley: Hey, what gives?

[Lilka grabs Ashley's hand and takes him.]



[They head to a museum.]

Ashley: This place is really something, eh?  
It really takes your breath away.

Lilka: I just love this place. This is so exciting... A midnight trip to the museum of wonders! Coming here at this time of night reminds me of someone very important to me.

Lilka: My sister and I used to sneak in here all the time.  
We were always together, my sister and I. I loved her so much.

Ashley: What do you mean, "loved"?

Lilka: All of Sjelje was sure she had a bright future ahead of her.  
But there was an accident... during a magical artifact experiment... She... she...

Ashley: Oh. I'm sorry. I didn't know.

Lilka: When they told me she wouldn't pull through, I was shattered.  
I never wanted to go through that pain again. So I decided never to care for anyone again. Ashley... You won't leave me, will you?

Ashley: Huh?

Lilka: Ashley, I really care for you, so don't ever leave me, OK? Of course I won't. None of us will. Not me, or Brad or Tim. Or even Irving. You'd better promise not to, otherwise I'll never be able to care for anyone again.

Ashley: I promise. After all, you are all important to me, too.

Lilka: Hocus Pocus Fizzipocus!

Ashley: Huh?

Lilka: It's a charm to give you good luck and to keep a smile on your face. My big sister taught it to me. I want to be like my sister. I want to create my own charm to make people smile.

Ashley: You can do it. I know you can!

Lilka: Thanks for believing in me! Well, then, let's get busy!

Ashley: Where are we going?

Lilka: To destroy that energy plant! I have the perfect item for the job! Hmm. Let me see that for a minute.

[They go downstairs. Lilka searches for something from the display.]

Lilka: I remember a Spell Bomb that sends a bomb blast between dimensions. Hey... That's strange.

Ashley: Lilka... The plan was to blow up the plant, right?

Lilka: Yeah. Why? Did you guys have a different plan?

[The alarm sounds.]

Ashley: Lilka!

Lilka: Hey, I didn't do anything! I can't find them anywhere!

Ashley: Well then where... The data tablets!

[Ashley and Lilka heads to McGregor's classroom. Tim and Brad are already there.]

McGregor: Someone stole all three data tablets. I'm so sorry.

[Irving appears on the projector.]

Ashley: Irving!

Irving: >I was briefed on what happened. Only you-know-who could have pulled off something like this. I need you help. The data tablets' ID pattern was detected moving southwest out of Sielje. I want you to begin pursuit immediately.

McGregor: To the southwest, you say? Ah ha! They're trying to go through Gate Bridge! This key will get you across Gate Bridge. Take it with you.

[The party acquires the Bridge Key.]

Ashley: (How did they know we were trying to analyze the tablets, anyway? Wait a sec... How did they even find out we were in Sielje? Could someone be feeding them information? No! It couldn't be!)

@McGregor: I'm sorry. I looked away for a moment. Oh, how unfortunate! I was in the middle of analysis! How will I satisfy my curiosity now? Still, this, too, presents a challenge to me, for being a scientist, I... [remainder omitted]

[They are about to leave Sielje, but Terry gets their attention.]

Terry: Lilka, wait! Are you going, too?

Lilka: Yeah. But don't worry about me.

Terry: W-Worry? I wasn't worried. I just...

Lilka: That, uh, bomb thing you have...

Terry: Eat My Dust. A Spell Bomb that sends a bomb blast between dimensions. Don't you remember that from class?

Lilka: I wasn't asking you what it was! I was trying to say that if you get caught with that thing, you'll get MAJOR hell!

Terry: And don't think I've forgotten about the challenge! You'd better not get killed out there, 'cause when you get back, we're going head to head! And let me tell you...

Lilka: I will NOT lose. I don't have time for this now! Catch ya later!

[The party acquires 'Eat my Dust'.]

-----

#####  
#[1.13] The Gate Bridge #  
#####

[ARMS leaves Sielje and heads for the Gate Bridge.]

~~Gate Bridge~~

[ARMS enters the bridge. The place starts shaking.]

Ashley: What's that vibration?

Lilka: It's not terribly peaceful!

[Meanwhile, Liz and Ard are seen near a control panel.]

Liz: Wooo! A lovely explosion! So boldly large!

Ard: Ard...Ard...Ard!

Liz: From here on, we can't cross even if we want to! Sooo smart!  
And we're soooo cooolll! If we raise the gate, it'll be all  
ours.

[Scene switches back to Ashley's group.]

Ashley: The bridge in front is open. Darn. It's one of their tricks!

Brad: Leave it to me. I'll lower the bridge.

[Brad manipulates another control panel nearby and the bridge lowers.]

[Scene switches to Liz & Ard.]

Liz: Ah? Awah. Our plan has gone up in smoke.

Ard: Ard!

Liz: How sneaky! We'll raise it again.  
Wo. Wo. Wo. Wo. What's going on?

[MESSAGE]: \*Energy is insufficient. 5 minutes until the bridge opens after  
recharging.

Liz: Mmm!

[Scene switches back to Ashley's party.]

Lilka: I don't get it but everything seems OK.

Ashley: Let's get across before the bridge reopens again!

[Ashley's party moves across the bridge.]

Ashley: Good. The bridge is still down. We need to blast over it!

[Meanwhile...]

Liz: I've reached such heights, and now there's no stopping me.

Ard: Ard. Ard.

Liz: Hey, don't worry, Ard. I'm a gentleman. As a gentleman I know no means no.

Ard: Ard??????

Liz: Gentlemen don't like violence but love the violence of words. Prepare for word torture! I can't keep quiet. I'm full of dangerous phrases that should be censored.

Ard: Ard, Ard, Ard...Ard. Ard...Ard.

Liz: What are you saying? You ask what am I going to do if they don't flinch. That's obvious. I'll hit and hit until they do as I say! I'll throw off the gentleman disguise. The era of the intellectual gangster is over.

[Some time passes. ARMS reaches the area where Liz and Ard are.]

Liz: I've been waiting for you all.

Ard: Ard, Ard!

Ashley: It's you again. Unrepentant fool!

Liz: Yes, indeed. The hidden powers spreading the terrorists's spell "Odessa" through the land are Liz & Ard. That's us. I'm not anyone suspicious.

Ashley: It's not a "Hidden Sphere" but "Sphere of Danger", right?

Liz: What's that? A compliment?  
That sweet smell of danger can't be hidden from us.

Ard: Ard. Ard.

Ashley: So, what do you want?

Liz: I wouldn't know! I'm the brains! Ard's the power! And, I'm cool! No matter how you look, we're first rate. You Filgaia guys are second rate. You won't get away with just a little burn.

Ashley: I can't back down now either! If you're going to confront us, you'll have to destroy us! Here goes.

[ARMS defeats Liz and Ard.]

Liz: I can't accept it!

Ard: Ard... Ard!

Liz: I gave him a nosebleed, but no "friendship" developed. My calculations how something vital missing?

Could it be "poetry"?

Ashley: I need to move. We have no time to play!

Liz: Ha. Ha. Ha. After all, we're just discarded horses.

Ard: Ard, Ard, Ard. Ard. Ard. Ard...Ard!

Liz: My apologies. My apologies for that little bit.  
..... Hey, you're not too bad. This calls for the best  
of the best, a proud No. 1 since it's debut!  
One look and you'll be going home!

[BOSS: Biogenic Dragonoid - Trask 2.0]

[ARMS defeats Trask 2.0.]

Liz: How wretched! Surprisingly, even the Monster Regeneration Unit  
responded, as if yielding to a baby. You think it was that?  
That the "regeneration" didn't work? You...If I only had  
Bulkogidon everyone would be paralyzed. If only it was  
finished. There's nothing more maddening than to be delayed  
by hoodlums I only just met! It makes me shake with anger.

Ard: Ard...Ard.

Liz: But, the legend of us, has just now begun. Today's scientific  
know-how will lead us to the Land of Promise. While I was  
waiting for that day to come with great anticipation,  
we morphed into this new shape.

Ashley: So that's what happened?

Liz: What are you, an idiot? Something like that could never happen!  
We've proudly looked like this since birth. Bluntly put, we're  
in our "birthday suits". Either way, we've managed to  
successfully delay you all on a grand scale never seen before.  
Listen. Thanks. Thanks.

Ashley: Darn!

Liz: Well, it was a rotten trick! We ungrudgingly exposed our  
brilliance. Vin is probably delighted by this! Me and my images  
of youth will never, ever be caught. As your last memory in  
your teens, let the sight of our departure burn your goggle-eyes.  
Adieu!

[Liz and Ard take off.]

Lilka: It's just like cutting the tail off a lizard.

Ashley: Drat! It's more important for us to pursue the Odessa Forces  
than chase those two!

=====

#####  
#[1.14] Greenhell to T'bok Village #  
#####

[ARMS leaves the Gate Bridge. The communicator starts beeping.]

Kate: >The data tablet pattern shows they're now heading northwest.

Brad: That's northwest from here... I bet they're trying to get through Greenhell!

Kate: >Greenhell? Did you say "Greenhell"?

Brad: Greenhell is a trail through the northwest forest.  
The Greenhell trail is the only way to escape this area.  
Even animals can't get out.

Irving: >The tablets' pattern still indicates northwest movement.  
We'll just have to trust Brad. Follow them! Stay on 'em like a bloodhound!

-----  
~~Greenhell~~

Brad: There should be a small village on the other side of the forest.  
As long as they're cutting through the forest too, they're bound to leave clues.

Ashley: Do you know anything about the village. Brad?

Brad: ..... Let's go. Their footprints lead directly north.

Lilka: Brad, you don't talk very much about yourself, do you?

[Brad remembers his past.]

Brad: I just don't have anything worth talking about.  
Let's hurry. The longer we wait, the harder the pursuit.

[ARMS goes past the forest and reaches to T'bok Village.]

-----  
~~T'bok Village~~

Brad: (The scenery hasn't changed since then. Could it still be the same? I have changed much since that day. Nothing stays the same, no matter what form it is...)

Ashley: Is something the matter?

Brad: It's nothing. Forget it. Let's keep following those guys.

[Brad & Co. approach a dog.]

Lilka: Well, well. Fancy this.

Woman: Stop that this instant! Don't bother travelers with all your horseplay!

Woman: Oh, hi, Mister!

Brad: I said my name isn't "Mister".

Brad: Is that you?

-> If Brad calls the dog Rassyu.

Brad: Is it you, Rassyu?

[Rassyu sounds happy.]

Woman: I knew it was you, Mister! It's me, Merrill!  
You remember me, right?

Brad: Uh, of course I do. But you've changed so much...

Merrill: It's been 5 years. Wouldn't it be strange if I hadn't?  
.....

-> If Brad calls the dog with a different name.

[Rassyu sounds sad.]

Woman: How could you forget Rassyu? I know it's been 5 years, but  
still...

Brad: Let's see, you must be...

Woman: It's me, Merrill. Not the same Merrill you knew before.  
I'm 17 now.

Merrill: We all have to look our age - including Rassyu and me. ....

Merrill: All this time, I had hoped that we would get the chance to meet  
again.

[Everyone follows Merrill.]

Merrill: After you left, Mister, I asked why everyone called you a "hero".  
And I asked why a hero like you would be chased down and  
captured like that. But you're not a bad man anymore, right,  
Mister? That's why you're here now, right?

Brad: No. I'm still a prisoner. I've been a prisoner ever since that  
day.

Merrill: I wanted to see you so that I could show you someone.  
After you were taken away, Rassyu told me he was in the forest,  
unconscious. I think he was in the Slayheim Liberation Army,  
like you. This is the place. Come on inside.

[Everyone enters the house. Inside, a man is seated on a wheelchair.]

Brad: We'll I'll be...

Merrill: Do you know him?

Brad: That I do.

Merrill: Oh, thank goodness.

[Merill goes to the wheelchair'd man and gets something.  
She shows something to Brad.]

Merill: He had this on him. This is his name, right?

Brad: Billy... Billy Pilder. He's a very close friend of mine.

Merill: I'm happy for you. But he must have amnesia from his fever and injuries. He keeps mumbling that his name is Brad Evans. Oh, well. If he's your friend, that's enough for me.

Brad: .....

Merill: I know you're glad to see your friend, but I have bad news. We weren't able to heal him... in body or mind.

Brad: It's enough for me that I got to see him alive. I mean, I'm grateful to you.

[Brad tells everyone about his past.]

Brad: Slayheim expanded its military against the people's wishes. Many small rebel groups staged scattered uprisings, but they were too unorganized. There then appeared a man who united the opposition into the Slayheim Liberation Army. That man's name was Vinsfeld Rhadamanthus. That's...the name of my former commanding officer.

Ashley: Brad! Vinsfeld was your commanding officer?!

Tim: Holy cow... So Brad, you and Vinsfeld were buddies?

Lilka: But Vinsfeld is the ringleader of Odessa. Why would the Liberation Army leader turn terrorist?

Merill: I heard people in my village say it was Vinsfeld's... charisma and the bravery of Brad Evans and his companions that enabled the Liberation to defeat the military despite their small numbers.

Brad: He and I were always fighting side by side. But he disappeared during the Final Operation. When the fighting was over... we Liberation Army veterans were blamed for the entire war. We were treated like war criminals. That's right. It was all a clever trap set and sprung by Vinsfeld.

Merill: Wow... I don't care what anyone says. Rassyu and I know you're not a bad man. Didn't you surrender to spare our village, five years ago? Besides, you helped the recruits from our village at Greenhell, right? No one in the village thinks you're a bad man, Mister.

Brad: So 5 years later... I return to this village which should have been the site of my grave. That scumbag Vinsfeld formed Odessa and came back before me! He betrayed me AND my friends, I'll never forgive him!

Ashley: But why did you keep quiet about this for so long? Who'd think you were once friends with our enemy, Vinsfeld?



Brad: I'm sorry. I thought it was between him and me. I wanted to settle it myself. I never intended to involve you in my private vendetta.

Lilka: Hey, we're all comrades in ARMS, right? That makes you our buddy, right, Brad? So what if you and Vinsfeld were buddies then, Brad. You're not any more, right?

Brad: That's right. I'm a member of ARMS, sworn enemy of Odessa.

Ashley: Let's focus on the present. The thieves who stole the data tablets were traced to this village. Just ahead is the ocean. They must have crossed the sea to the continent. Makes sense?

Brad: The desert in the northwest is where Slayheim once was. Knowing Vinsfeld, he could be using the abandoned facilities there as a base of operations. There's a town called Quartly near there. We should start gathering information there. But it'll be hard to get to Slayheim without a boat.

Tim: And we left the Hovercraft a long ways from here.

Ashley: Then Quartly it is. It's a long shot, but the best we have. Tomorrow we'll figure out a way to get to Slayheim. There has to be a way.

@Merill: I first met him 5 years ago going into the village. Rassyu told me he had collapsed in the rain. Hard to believe that was 5 years ago.

B@Merill: I'm so glad you're alright. I was so worried! I didn't know where you went or even if you were alright!

@Billy: Ugh... T-The light... It... Ugh... Arrghh!

B@Billy: Brad... Brad... People... ...people brak... Ha ha ha...

@Man: Those thieves were heading for the desert on the western continent.

[Brad & Co. approaches Rassyu. The dog runs.]

Merill: That Rassyu is a handful. He has the strange habit of collecting junk and bringing it to people he likes.

[Rassyu comes back.]

[The party acquires a TeleportOrb and the Data Tablets.]

Lilka: Look! The data tablets!

Ashley: They've been destroyed. So they realized we were their pattern to track them. Whoever did this knew a lot about the data tablets.

Brad: They erased the memory. It looks like the trail runs cold here. Time for good, old-fashioned marching. On to Slayheim!

Ashley: What's this? It's a teleport item. With this, we can teleport to any town that we've visited at least once before.

Lilka: But I never did have much luck with this type of item.

-----

```
#####  
#[1.15] Kanon the Exorcist #  
#####
```

<Call Menu>

Irving: >We do have some information about Quartly here. To reach Quartly, go up the Lilikis River, which flows into the southwest part of the Inland Sea. You should be able to reach the desert from the coast. Quartly is a town on a bridge spanning a huge rift valley known as Big Valley. That's all the information I have. Over and out.

-----

[ARMS gets on the Hovercraft and lands to a coast near a desert. There, they find Quartly.]

~~Quartly~~

[On their way, a Merc gets their attention.]

One-eyed female Merc: I need someone to help me exorcise monsters.  
Interested?

Lilka: Exorcise monsters?

Ashley: Some Mercs specialize in monster exorcism. She must be one.

One-eyed female Merc: I need a little help exorcising monsters in Slayheim Castle.

Ashley: Help? But I...

One-eyed female Merc: It's settled, then. Don't worry! It'll be a piece of cake. The exorcism starts tomorrow. I'll see you then.

Ashley: Wait! I don't know anything about you! How am I supposed to work with you when I don't even know your name?

One-eyed female Merc: The name's Kanon...

Ashley: Kanon?

Kanon: That's what people call me. And that's all you need to know. You're Ashley Winchester.

[Kanon leaves. Meanwhile, Brad stares at a suspicious man as he walks away.]

Tim: Kanon, huh... She knew who you were, Ashley.

Lilka: But she didn't even say when or where we're supposed to meet.

Ashley: (The "other" me senses something, but I can't put my finger on it. Just who is Kanon, anyway?)

Brad: We'll find out tomorrow... when we go to Slayheim Castle.  
For now, let's just get some rest.

[That night, at the inn...]

Ashley: Brad? It's about Slayheim Castle... Hey, where are you?

[Ashley goes out and finds Brad talking to the suspicious man earlier.  
Ashley quietly returns to the inn.]

[Brad enters the inn.]

Ashley: Brad, where were you? I wanted to ask you about Slayheim Castle.

Brad: Sorry about that. Slayheim Castle is located at the northeastern  
edge of the salt flats.

Ashley: (How strange... Brad was evasive. But why? No! I mustn't doubt  
him! If I can't trust a guy I fought side-by-side with, who can  
I trust?)

Brad: What is it, Ashley?

Ashley: Huh? Oh. it's nothing. Forget it.

Brad: To get to Slayheim Castle, we must cross the desolate salt flats.  
The salt flats are haunted by ghosts. Don't let them lead you  
astray!

[The next day, ARMS leaves Quarty and heads to Slayheim Castle.]

-----  
~~Slayheim Castle~~

Ashley: I guess Kanon isn't here yet. The castle hasn't been engulfed by  
the sea of salt yet. Let's take a look around while we're  
waiting.

[ARMS takes a look in the castle for a while. Brad remembers his  
past as they go on further in the castle.]

[FLASHBACK - On the throne room, Billy helps Brad to walk  
(or the other way around) towards some Slayheim Liberation Army men.]

SLA soldier: Hey, you can't collapse now, not after coming this far!

Billy: I know, I know. We can't stop now because this is a chance we  
can't afford to lose!

SLA soldier: Captain! The royal family seems to be hiding in a cellar!  
We request instructions, sir!

Billy: We can't blow this chance! If we stop here, we'll suffer an  
irrecoverable setback!

[FLASHBACK - In the room past the double doors. Brad, Billy and  
a SLA soldier are using some crates as a shield as they're being  
fired upon by their enemies.]

SLA soldier: We're low on ammo and most of the squad is wounded!  
How can you think we still stand a chance

Billy: We MUST win, no matter what happens.  
We're gonna turn things around now!

[Billy fires on their enemies.]

[FLASHBACK - In a room, the SLA surrounds their enemies.]

SLA Soldier: There is no time to celebrate!

Billy: What is it?

SLA Soldier: That loser fugitive must have lost his mind!

Billy: The King of Slayheim?

SLA Soldier: He activated the triggering device on the "Angel Halo".

Brad: Good lord! That's an Angel Weapon! They were permanently banned  
under the Treaty of Iscariot! There must be a code to deactivate  
the bomb. The king must know. Beat it out of him if you have  
to!

Billy: Believe me, I'd like to, but it's too late.  
The idiot blew his own brains out.

Brad: That son of a...!

Billy: I'll turn that sucker off.

Brad: Don't be an idiot! We can't afford to lose you!

Billy: I don't plan on dying. Besides, you still have something that's  
mine.

[Brad tries to stop Billy but he was punched down instead.]

Billy: Take care of Vinsfeld for me.

[Billy leaves.]

[FLASHBACKS END.]

Brad: (Billy... That was our last mission together. When the  
"Angel Halo" detonated, I never thought I'd see him again.  
But he mad it back alive. And I have to stay alive so that when  
the war is over, I cane give him back what I'm holding for him.)

[After they're done exploring the castle, ARMS returns to the entrance.]

Voice echoing through the castle: You are like this castle's ghosts.  
You possess a life that is not of this world.

[Kanon enters.]

Kanon: I will send you to where you belong.  
You do not belong in this world.

Ashley: It's you! You're that Merc! Are you an assassin for Odessa?

Kanon: I don't work for anyone. I only follow my destiny. Besides, Odessa could never tie me down. I don't have anything personal against you. But I must slay the "monster" that lurks within you. I do not tell you to surrender. I simply say, "Accept"!

[Kanon leaps to them.]

Kanon: It is my destiny to hunt down and kill monsters and ghosts.  
I will cut down anyone who tries to stop me!  
I have sworn an oath to myself!

[ARMS defeats Kanon.]

Kanon: Damn! I was careless! But this isn't over yet. I will fulfill my oath to myself! ...My oath to kill all monsters! I will hunt you down, no matter where you run to! Till then, stay healthy. Do not rob me of my pleasure. By the way, Vinsfeld said the hero he knew 5 years ago was left-handed. Watch your back from now on! You are my prey, and I won't let anyone else take you!

[Kanon leaves.]

=====

#####  
#[1.16] Alchemic Plant #  
#####

<Call Menu>

Amy: >We're still trying to find Odessa's exact location.  
I want you to stand by in the town of Quartly.

[ARMS returns to Quartly. Inside the inn...]

Ashley: It's me. Come in, Valeria Chateau. Do you read me?

[Ashley reports the current situation.]

Ashley: And that's that.

Irving: >Since you're near Quartly, I want you to check something there. Despite the signal jamming, we detected an unusual energy waveform from the desert. It could be an Odessa facility ...or even a main base.

Ashley: Do you have the exact location?

Irving: >From here, it's a miracle that we even picked up a the signal. The only way to pinpoint the location is for you to comb the desert area.

[Ashley's party leaves Quartly.]

-----

[ARMS searches the desert and they find the alchemic plant.]

Meanwhile...]

Antenora: We've just received a report that ARMS has infiltrated our plant.

Vinsfeld: So, they've finally come. Antenora, I'm leaving the plant's defenses to you.

Antenora: This position here?

Vinsfeld: Yes. I'll be joining Ptolomea and heading for "Heimdall Gazzo". This place is in your hands.

Antenora: Yes, Sir.

Vinsfeld: Do you hate me?

Antenora: What? Why all of a sudden?

Vinsfeld: You think I don't know?

Antenora: .....

Vinsfeld: If I can't have your heart. I have no desire for this world. If you think I'm your enemy, kill me here and now.

Antenora: Vinsfeld, Sir. Please hurry, Vinsfeld, Sir. Right now, we're being ambushed by the ARMS.

[Vinsfeld leaves.]

[Antenora sits down and starts crying.]

Antenora: Oou. Oou. Oou.

-----  
~~Alchemic Plant~~

[Ashley's party encounters some enemies as soon as they enter the plant.]

Ashley: Some ambush.

[The party defeats them.]

Ashley: ..... (It can't be Brad. That's impossible....)

[ARMS explores the plant until they reach a big control terminal.]

Lilka: Wow! This seems a bit much!

Tim: If we can confuse the enemy by using this machine...  
Our mission will become a lot easier.

Brad: This looks like a job for me. I'll take care of this.  
You guys need to go on to the deepest depths. After I finish here, I'll follow. We'll operate independently for a time.

Ashley: Brad... I understand. Then we'll meet at the deepest depths.  
OK. Let's go!

Ashley: (Can we leave Brad all by himself? I've decided to have faith in my friends! But...)

[Ashley, Tim and Lilka move along.

They reach a door and someone seems to be talking inside.]

-Ashley: I think someone's in there. I can't be found so I won't open the door. Hmm... They're transmitting. I wonder how I can intercept the message?

-Lilka: Oh, is someone inside? They're saying something. I must know. They're transmitting.

-Tim: Someone's inside. I must be quiet now. Wha? I hear a voice but it's so small, I can barely make it out.

[They use the communicator to intercept the message.]

Radio Operator A: >Sir, the Guard Robot is ready. This one has a bad radiator. A sharp temperature change could cause the robot to shut down. Until the new radiator comes, all we can do is improvise.

Commander: >Understood. Use string and gum if you have to, soldier.

[Moving on, the party encounters a robot in their way. Learning about it's weakness to temperature changes, Lilka uses her rods and it explodes. They move along more and find more people transmitting.]

Radio Operator B: >I think I left my code book in a locker somewhere. Have you seen it?

Radio Operator E: >Sorry, I ain't seen it. That thing's top secret! You'll catch hell for losing it!

Radio Operator B: >I'd better find it right away! But where could I have left it?

[And another one.]

Radio Operator C: >Commander, it's time to change the password.

Commander: >We're using "QOW" now, right?

Radio Operator C: >No, sir, that was the last one. We're using "ONM" now.

Commander: >That's what I was about to say. Anyhow, change the password according to the code book.

Radio Operator C: >Yes, sir!

[The party moves on. They reach a door which uses a voice recognition system.]

[Voice Verifier]: \*A block up ahead. Access to authorized personnel only. Start Voice Print Verification.

-Ashley: Voice Print Verification What am I going to do?!

-Lilka: Oo...Um... Umoo... It...it is I...I... Oh. Hee. Hee!  
Oooo... Don't embarrass me.

-Tim: I've got it! Pooka could... or so I thought, but Pooka needs a Medium to copy shapes and skills.

[Voice Verifier]: \*Voice Print Verification Complete. The voice print is not registered with the pertinent patterns. A block is up ahead. Use of the block is limited to Rank A Members and the Special Cocytus Corp.

[They find more doors with people transmitting behind. The party switches back-and-forth between the doors.]

Commander: >Is that equipment check done?

Radio Operator F: Yes, sir, almost finished.

---

Radio Operator F: >Did you hear me, sir?

Commander: >I hear you, soldier.

---

Radio Operator F: >Um, just a few more things... Mop, recorder, flashlight. One each sir.

Commander: >Alright, then. Hold on a sec while I start recording.

---

Commander: >Alright, good work, son. Now you are to help me track down the ARMS intruders.

Radio Operator F: >Yes, sir. Consider me part of the search team now.

[They head over one of the rooms which is now open. They search the lockers.]

-Ashley: Is this the only one that's not broken?

-Tim: I'm going to just take it and not say anything. Sorry.

-Lilka: Ah! I've always wanted something like this!

[The party finds a Recorder in the lockers.]

[They go back to the voice print protected door and used the recorder.]

-Ashley: I must get the "voice" which will act as a key.

-Lilka: A voice print? Do they want me to impersonate someone?

-Tim: Wha...what shall I do? Oops. I shouldn't be talking, should I?

[More transmissions.]

Radio Operator D: >It's pretty boring considering the incursion of ARMS.

Radio Operator G: >I know. It's way too mellow. Did ARMS really attack?

Radio Operator D: >Don't sweat it. Let the patrol 'bots take care of 'em.



After all, there's no sense putting ourselves in danger.

---

Antenora: >What has ARMS done since then?

Radio Operator E: >All we know is this, ma'am: Several patrol 'bots have been destroyed, but still no trace of ARMS.

Antenora: >Now get this straight soldier. You and every other troop in this plant is an elite Odessa fighter. So no lame excuses.

Radio Operator E: >Yes, ma'am! Understood, ma'am! We'll find those AMRS chumps and hang 'em by their petards!

-Ashley: If I were closer, I might be able to record Antenora's voice.

-Lilka: Ah! If I record that voice from here...

-Tim: Is this Antenora's voice? That reminds me, I saw something useful-looking back there.

[They use the recorder.]

-Ashley: Is this voice Cocytus's Antenora? With a recorder, I'm going to "steal" this voice!

Ashley: I got Antenora's voice! With this voice, I hope to trick the Voice Verifier.

-Lilka: With the recorder from before, I can get Antenora's voice. With that, I'll be able to easily pass the voice print test!

Lilka: Ha ha! I scored! With this, I'll pass the voice verifier.

-Tim: That machine records voices, right? Well, let's try it.

Tim: Now that I have the voice, I must hurry and test it!

[ARMS goes back to the Voice Verifier and plays Antenora's voice.]

Voice of Antenora: All right? Don't forget. All the soldiers here at the plant were from Odessa's forces.

[Voice Verifier]: \*Voice Print Verification Complete: The voice print verified is Antenora Cocytus. The block will be released.

-Ashley: Great! It worked. Though it's a machine, it's disappointing how far from the truth it is. And, if it had been a human it could have been worse.

-Lilka: I think my voice is way cuter, but... Oh well, a machine couldn't be able to tell that!

-Tim: It worked. I can talk now, right?

[ARMS moves on past the door.]

Ashley: We're almost to the energy reactor.  
It's a dead end up ahead. Let's try elsewhere.

[The door up ahead opens. Antenora appears from it.]

Lilka: Antenora!

Antenora: You...you plan on bringing Vinsfeld down?

[Some doppelgangers appear and surround them.]

Ashley: If so, what of it? We're going to put a stop to your schemes!

Antenora: Impossible. That's not possible for you. Because I'm going to stop you. I'm not going to let you all take him down. I don't want to witness that. Let this "thread" make you dance, dance the dance of death. It suits you all so well.

[ARMS fights Antenora. After the battle...]

Antenora: Is that all you can do? Don't disappoint me. With your current powers, it's impossible for you to destroy him. Sorry but your organization has an intelligence leak.

[Brad appears from the door where Antenora came in through.]

Ashley: Impossible! Are you sure?

Antenora: I wonder? What's it like to have someone you trust turn on you? After all, your bonds are only so strong.

[The doppelgangers all transform into Brad.]

Ashley: It's a...

Antenora: "Doppelganger". Quite an amusing little sideshow, don't you say? This formless monster steals not only shape, but one's memories and skills too. The intelligence was gathered by a doppelganger in the form of Brad. The doppelganger I sent in has stirred up more distrust than we had ever hoped.

Ashley: How could this happen?

Brad: What are you doing?! It's not over, yet.

Ashley: Brad!

Brad: Hand over the "Eat My Dust"! Now.

Antenora: What's the matter? He might be a fake as well?

Ashley: You said our ties were only so strong. Well, you may be right. No, you are right! I once mistrusted a friend... I couldn't completely trust someone I fought alongside of. That's why this time I am putting my trust in my friends! So I don't submit to you! And to strengthen my friendships! Brad!

[Ashley throws the 'Eat My Dust' to Brad. He immediately uses it to wipe out the Doppelgangers and create a gap between Ashley's party and Antenora & Brad.]

Antenora: No need to go all out.

[Antenora disappears.]

Ashley: Ouuuu, Brad... Retreat. We've failed our mission! Retreat and regroup!

Brad: No. I won't go now. I'm going to finish the mission.

Ashley: How? "Eat My Dust" has been used, so how are you going to blow up the plant?

Brad: ..... There's a bomb right here.

Ashley: Don't be ridiculous! It... the "Gias" won't come off so easily!

[More doppelgangers appear.]

Brad: There's no time. It's not smart like "Eat My Dust" -- the bomb can't be neutralized later on. Before I blow up the plant, you guys need to get out of here.

Ashley: What are you going to do?

Brad: I'm going to fulfill my destiny as a hero.

Ashley: Promise to return. We're heroes because we always return from danger.

[Brad looks away.]

Ashley: Evacuate immediately! Don't look back. Just look forward and get out of here now!

Lilka: What are you saying?

Tim: Do you mean? Brad, you're...

Ashley: Believe! We'll meet again Promise. I promise!

[Ashley gets Lilka and Tim.]

Ashley: Here I go.

[Ashley's party flees.]

Brad: Going off to one's death is what "Heroes" do, I guess.

[Brad moves ahead.]

Brad: Right now, at this moment I understand how "He" felt.  
.....Doesn't look I'll be able to keep my promise, but I think I'll be forgiven. I'm off to fulfill my destiny as a "Hero".

[Ashley's party exits the plant and sees the plant as it explodes.]

Ashley: Brad-----

=====

#####  
#[1.17] Escort the Son of the Guild Galad Master #  
#####

~~Valeria Chateau~~

Irving: We detected that explosion from the Valeria Chateau, too.  
Based on the pattern we think it was "Gias". It was definitely  
"Gias", the bomb implanted in Brad Evans' neck.

Ashley: Is it at all possible... It is at all possible he survived?

Irving: The powerful bomb around his neck has exploded. We cannot  
imagine anyone surviving such a thing.

Ashley: I'm sorry, Brad. There was a time when I doubted you.  
But not any more.

Irving: I have a new mission for you.

Tim: At a time like this?

Ashley: Destroy Odessa utterly without wasting one breath. Return peace  
to the world. That is the only true way to mourn Brad.

Lilka: Yes, yes, that is what we will do! That will make it better,  
won't it? Tim, you shouldn't mope around forever either.  
Cheer up!

Tim: Yes, you are right. I am sorry. I'm fine.

Irving: Your next mission is to guard someone very important. Guard the  
Guild Galad Master's son and take him back to his country.

Ashley: You may be attacked by Odessa...

Irving: The request for protection came from the Guild Galad Master.

Lilka: That is unbelievable. Does he think ARMS is his own personal  
escort service?! I knew I had a reason for disliking him!

Irving: Use the long-distance subway for this mission. The station is  
located north of Quartly, at the mountains' foot.  
Meet with them there.

Tim: Can't be crying all the time.

Lilka: Brad will laugh.

Ashley: Time for action now!

@Irving: Urartu Station is near the Urartu Mountains north of Quartly.  
We are protecting the son of the Guild Galad Master, so no  
mistakes!

<Call Menu>

Irving: >Your new mission is to guard the Guild Galad Master's son.  
Rendezvous at Urartu Station, north of Quartly.  
You'll have to forget about Brad for now. I'm sorry.

-----  
[ARMS heads to Urartu station to rendezvous with the Guild Galad Master's son.]

Son of Guild Galad Master: Thank you for coming all this way. I am Noel  
Anaheim Guild Galad. I am pleased to make your acquaintance.

Ashley: Oh... H-How do you do? T-The pleasure's all ours, I'm sure!

Noel: I was expecting a much more fearsome-looking group. But I'm  
relieved that you seem quite normal. Being guarded by stern  
types can be quite tiring.

Conductor: Master Noel is in your hands. Please take good care of him.  
You'll be heading straight to Guild Galad, with no stops. After  
all, we can't be too careful. Please, don't let those villains  
of Odessa harm master Noel.

Lilka: (This kid doesn't need bodyguards!)

Tim: (You're right.)

Conductor: It's almost time for the train to depart. Please start boarding  
now.

Noel: Let's be off then, everyone.

Tim: Wow!

Lilka: This is cool!

Ashley: ...

Noel: Is something the matter?

Ashley: Uh, no. I was just thinking, "Oh, a freight train".

Noel: Yes, the "Dianbai Guang" is a freight train. Is that a problem?

Ashley: No, it's just that since you're the prince of Guild Galad...  
I was expecting something ornate and glittery.

Noel: Guild Galad's products are built for quality, not to be  
pretentious. We emphasize functionality above all else. What  
need does the son of Guild Galad Master have for a pompously  
decorated train? And, besides, I love the Dianbai Guang.  
I'd rather ride this train than any other.

Conductor: Noel! You can talk on the train! Your father will reprimand me  
if the train doesn't depart on time!

Noel: Oh, sorry! We'll get aboard right now! Come, let's hurry.  
The conductor's getting impatient.

[The train departs. Inside...]

Ashley: They're awfully pretentious.

Noel: Really, my father is a problem. He said it's for my protection,

but this draws so much attention, I'm in more danger.

Ashley: Ha. Ha. Ha. We'll be fine. (Or just in case, for when the time comes it's military power. Brad, at a time like this, what would you think?)

Lilka: Noel really is very nice but Noel's father is quite strange.

Ashley: Lilka!

Lilka: Oh! Did I speak too bluntly?

Noel: Oh, never mind. It's fine. Father's personality is what it is, but everything he does is for Guild Galad. He too wishes to return to a kinder and gentler world.

Ashley: (I've thought of this before... Why, when we all desire the same results, do people choose such different paths? I have no answer.)

Tim: This tunnel is long.

Noel: Yes. Originally, this was a cargo route to export goods manufactured in Guild Galad. The scenery before and after the tunnel are dramatically different.

Noel: This is odd.

Ashley: What is it, Noel?

Noel: We should be out of the tunnel by now. Let's confirm this with the conductor.

Conductor: Young Master!

Noel: Why are you so excited? Calm down.

Conductor: We can't get out of the tunnel. We're caught in a strange space. We can't even find our position!

Lilka: It's here.

Tim: Looks that way.

Ashley: Time for us to act. Noel, wait here.

Noel: Yes. I'm going to see the famous ARMS in action with my own eyes.

@Noel: Don't worry about me. I'm going to see the famous ARMS in action with my own eyes.

[The party leaves the train.]

~~Emulator Zone~~

[The party examines a red panel.]

Voice in Space: How can you not question a world full of deception?  
Worried, confused. You all who don't look back don't deserve a

future.

Voice in Space: The quasi-space (Emulator Zone) was lured by Randolph the Magic Key. Hope you meet death in the dimension interval and rot!

Ashley: You are Odessa's Cocytus?

Voice in Space: It's the first time we meet. I am Caina, one of Odessa's Cocytus. You ARMS who opposes Sir Vinsfeld ideals. You've got a red light now. We'll have you stay here in the Emulator Zone with the train.

[Caina appears.]

Ashley: We must arrive on time as scheduled. We want a green light.

[BOSS: Special Cocytus Squad Member - Caina]

Caina: That day of the Demon Summoning, if not at the <Sword Cathedral>... If you hadn't return alive with the Demon inside you, our goals wouldn't be undone!

Ashley: Huh!? So this was your doing, wasn't it?

Caina: If so, what're you gonna do about it? Ashley Winchester...

Ashley: Oooooooooohhhhhh! Oooooooooohhhhhh! Oooooooooohhhhhh!  
You won't get away with this, Odessa.

[The party battles Caina.]

Caina: (Darn! The mental convergence broke. As long as the generator is running, we can maintain the Emulator Zone. Looks like we better hurry!)

[Caina disappears.]

Ashley: Stop!

Lilka: I wonder what they're scheming this time?

Ashley: I don't know. Proceed Until we destroy this Emulator Zone, we can't go back.

[ARMS explores the Emulator Zone.  
They find a room with a huge object floating in the center.]

Tim: This seems to be the generator creating the Emulator Zone.

Lilka: What should I do? Should I bash it?

Ashley: We won't be able to deliver Noel back until we destroy... the zone holding the train. This might be a bit rough, but let's try something!

[Tim shoots the blocks that are holding the generator with his Air Ballet.  
The generator crashes.]

Tim: Did anything happen? First, let's return to the train.

[They try to go back but they see Kanon standing above the gate.]

Kanon: It's said to be good for buying time, but I won't be doing that.

Lilka: Kanon!

Ashley: If Odessa's hired you, you should reconsider! Odessa is a terrorist group which has brought turmoil and destruction to Filgaia!

Kanon: I'm aware of that.

Tim: If so, then why?

Kanon: Ashley Winschester, I have my own reasons why I must fight you. Or should I say I have my reasons why I need to hunt the Demon that lurks inside you.

Ashley: On a mission to exorcise evil?

[Kanon draws her blade.]

Kanon: That's true too. But it's not all there is! The blood in my body is the blood of a "hero"! As a descendant of the <Sword Magess>, I am destined to destroy the Demon!

Ashley: A Sword... Magess!

Kanon: That's right. I have lived until today with the purpose of fighting the Demon! I have thrown away my womanhood and body and lived as a human concealed weapon! I have no resentment toward you, but I do have a reason to take your life.

[The party fights Kanon. Some time passes...]

Kanon: (The Emulator Zone's generator has been damaged. Looks like this quasi-space won't last too long.)

Kanon: Let's call it a temporary truce. If we get sucked into the zone's collapse we'll spend eternity as the dead. The only way to get out is to blast the train through the self-repairing dimension at high speed! Hurry, Ashley!

Ashley: Why are you helping us? Answer me, Kanon!

Kanon: It's rather commonplace, but to me my reasons are important. I do it because I am the legendary sword that pierces you!

Ashley: Kanon...

Kanon: This is the destiny of a descendant of the <Sword Magess>.

Ashley: Wait! Destiny... Do I really have to battle you for such a flimsy reason? Why do we in the present have to bound to a destiny from the past?!

Kanon: By carrying out my destiny, I've been able to believe in myself. You wouldn't understand. You wouldn't understand the confusion of an uncertain self.



[Kanon disappears.]

[Ashley & Co. runs back to the train.]

Ashley: Noel! Hurry and start the train!

Noel: I guess now's not the time to ask why. Roger.  
Emergency ignition start.

[The train runs.]

Ashley: More... Can't you go any faster?

Conductor: This is the limit! If we go any faster, the train will explode!

Lilka: Move all the passengers to the cars in front.

Tim: The rear cars are cargo. I just checked.

Noel: What concerns me is Odessa's motives.

Ashley: Aren't they targeting you? Can you think of anything else?

Noel: Do they plan to take me hostage for a ransom? Funds are needed  
to run organizations, so terrorists are no different.

Ashley: Hmmmm...

Lilka: Hey, hey! Isn't that what they call the "Dimension Seam"?

Tim: But it looks like it'll close up at any moment!

Ashley: Faster!

Conductor: Don't ask the impossible. I've been telling you, it's going to  
explode.

Noel: Detach the rear cars. It'll make us go faster!

Conductor: Young Master, Th...that's...

Noel: Is there a problem? The rear cars are all cargo. Human life  
cannot be replaced. Or is there something I don't know about?

Conductor: No. Nothing, Sir.

Noel: Then hurry.

Lilka: (Sis...)

Conductor: I take no responsibility for what may happen.  
Release the rear cargo cars!

[The train's rear cars are released. The train speeds up and is able to  
exit the Emulator Zone.]

[The train arrives at the Guild Galad side of the Urartu Station.]

Conductor: Oh, my. I'm sure to catch hell for this.

Ashley: I'm sorry about the train, Noel. But we had to sacrifice it to save you.

Noel: Don't worry about the train. My father hired you to guard me, and you have done that job splendidly.

Ashley: But you were very fond of that train, weren't you?

Noel: I was. But your concern is consolation enough.

Conductor: Young master, what do we do now?

Noel: I want you to repair Dianbai Guang. We'll go on ahead and return to Guild Galad at once. If I don't get back soon, Father will be furious. Ashley, let us make haste. Guild Galad is located on the reclaimed land northeast of this station.

<Call Menu>

Amy: Um... Ashley? Oh, I was so worried! I couldn't get through to you! Oh, well, at least you're alright. I wanted to tell you that Guild Galad is on a landfill north of Urartu Station.

---

[Ashley's party reaches Guild Galad.]

~~Guild Galad~~

Guild Galad Master: Cretins! Blundering idiots! I did not hire you to escort my son so that you could wreck my property!

Noel: Father! Father, you mustn't be so rude to them! The only reason I made it back home safely to Guild Galad is that the ARMS team protected my life with such valor and tireless effort.

Guild Galad Master: S-Silence, I say!

Guild Galad Master: Damn you! Why did you have to uncouple the freight cars?!

Noel: It was to save the lives of all onboard.

Guild Galad Master: Yes, well, but...

Noel: Father, why are you so upset about what happened? I am safe, am I not? ... Father... Was it the freight cars and not me that Odessa was after?

Guild Galad Master: H-How dare you... I... I just...

Noel: Those gold and jewels were but a drop in your ocean of wealth. Unless there was something else... Father! Did you mean to acquire a Super Weapon banned under the Treaty of Iscarriot? How could you?!

Guild Galad Master: N-Noel... Y-You must understand. I...

Noel: This changes everything. I must apologize to you. There is no reason for you to be blamed.

This is the fault of Guild Galad.

Ashley: I don't get it. What's going on?

Noel: Father was trying to sneak a weapon into the country on that train. I suspect it was a Lost Technology unearthed in secrecy. But that weapon has fallen into the hands of Odessa.

Ashley: I see. I resent being deceived. That is inexcusable. However... What's done is done. We must focus on repairing the damage. We must thwart whatever evil scheme Odessa is planning with that Super Weapon.

Noel: Thank you! As son of Guild Galad Master, I can think of nothing better than to hear you say that!

Lilka: But what about the Super Weapon? How powerful is it?

Noel: Father, I implore you. Tell them! Only they can help us now!

Guild Galad Master: The Super Weapon was found on an old battlefield in Slayheim. It...

[The Guild Galad Master tells the party about the super weapon.]

[Meanwhile, inside Odessa HQ...]

Vinsfeld: Yes, "Nuclear Weapons"!!!

Ptolomea: "Nuke"? What are...

Vinsfeld: Weapons using "Nuclear" energy, the pride of the lost technology. They are super weapons that apply the theory that mass is converted to energy in a chain reaction.

Caina: The dynamics are completely different from our magic powers. "Nuclear Weapons", the unwanted byproduct of Industrial Sorcery. They don't exist, do they?

Judecca: But if they're so powerful, the joy of the "kill" can't be that great.

Antenora: "Nukes" are powerful but their value is not their power.

Vinsfeld: That's right. The super weapons that affect the balance of power are valuable only for their deterrent value. Ha. Ha. The world is now in my hands. Once I have the aerial fortress Heimdal Gazzo and the nuclear weapon Grauswein...

[Back at Guild Galad...]

Noel: Odessa wants to conquer the world. They would never use a nuke.

Tim: Oh, yeah? What makes you so sure?

Lilka: Yeah. Why would they steal a weapon they never intend to use?

Noel: A nuclear weapon can lay waste to a huge area. It destroys all life and renders the land eternally uninhabitable! Why would Odessa wish to rule a barren, lifeless world?

Guild Galad Master: They wanted the nuke as a threat! I, too, sought a nuclear weapon as a deterrent which to counter Odessa's threat. After all, Odessa is sure to use its nuclear weapon at the bargaining table.

Noel: Odessa means to intimidate the other nations. We must stop them! Ashley... What is it?

Ashley: Oh, nothing. It just occurred to me that the "world domination" Odessa seeks is a truly formidable task.

Lilka: Huh? What on earth are you talking about?

Ashley: On our many missions, we have come across many different people. All had their own ideas and their own way of doing things. I'm only stating the obvious, of course. Even people who shared the same goal used different methods to achieve that goal. In short, no two people think alike. Accordingly, words like "conquer" and "dominate" mean different things to different people.

Noel: Yes, I see what you are getting at. "World domination" may sound like a lofty goal. But the day-to-day job of actually ruling the world would be fraught with overwhelming difficulty.

Noel: Each area has its own customs, its own industry, its own laws. Its own way of thinking! There is simply too much diversity for the world to be ruled by any one group.

Ashley: In this light, "world domination" is just an unrealistic dream. Yet we face an enemy who is trying to achieve that very goal.

Lilka: The future is uncertain. But what is certain is that Odessa is causing suffering right NOW. We must stop them. We must DESTROY them!

Noel: Guild Galad will provide you with any backup you need. Isn't that right, father?

Guild Galad Master: We will begin by upgrading your Hovercraft. We'll give it an Aport Feature which is similar to the Teleport Orb. You'll be able to go anywhere in the seas of Filgaia. So please, stop them.

@Noel: Thank you for guarding me aboard the train. I apologize for keeping the nuke a secret. I did not know myself, but I feel as if I deceived you.

@Guild Galad Master: Odessa stole our nuclear weapon! But how on earth did Odessa know the nuke was on that train? Could there be a spy in our midst?

=====

```
#####  
#[1.18] Closed Mine Shaft #  
#####
```

<Call Menu>

Amy: Um, hello? I have some hopefully helpful info for ya.  
Odessa is after a mine, right? Well, both Damzen and Holst are well-known mining towns. Sorry, but that's all we know right now. You'll just have to go on that, OK?

[The party finds info in the town of Holst.]

@Man in Holst: Have you heard? There's a rumor that the terrorists are after this town's ore... They're amateurs, though. They're after the mine to the northeast of town. Or should I say the OLD mine that used to operate on the northeast side of town. Seems to me that going after an old closed-down mine is pretty foolish...

[The party leaves Holst and heads to the mine the man mentioned.]

-----  
~~Closed Mine Shaft~~

Ashley: I heard this mine was closed off a long time ago.

Tim: ..... Yes, that's right. I can't feel any energy.

Ashley: You can tell?

Pooka: A Zoa Priest is a priest who channels the Guardians' power. They can sense the energy of the earth and spirits. That's proof that Tim's abilities as a Zoa Priest have developed.

Lilka: If that's so, then something's strange? Odessa's getting frantic trying to secure a large energy source, right? Then why would they be after an empty mine?

Ashley: That's true.

Tim: I wonder what Brad would notice in a situation like this.

Lilka: Don't do that.  
There's no use talking about someone who won't return.

Tim: I'm sorry, but...

Ashley: Let's survey the place first. It may take awhile, but if you keep moving forward, the route should appear.

<Call Menu>

Amy: Watch out for cave-ins while you're in the mine shaft.  
And watch out for Odessa, too.

[The party explores the Closed Mine Shaft until they reach the end of it. They encounter Kanon.]

Kanon: So, you're here Ashley. You are the carrier of the Demon.

Ashley: Kanon... Descendant of the <Sword Magess>.

Tim: Please wait a minute! We have no desire to fight you!  
We aren't supposed to fight!

Lilka: That's right! We're only fighting reluctantly because you attacked us!

Kanon: That's right. If I weren't burdened with destiny, I'd have no reason to fight you. But! Ashley Winchester... As long as the Demon lurks within you, I target you. You are my prey, I who carry the blood of the <Sword Magess>!

Ashley: Do I have no choice?

Kanon: There's no choice but to battle! Beware! The "Blood of the Magess" and Flesh of the Demon"... are calling to each other. In other words, Ashley and my lost "half-self"! The battle, determining male or female is the way it should be.

[The party defeats Kanon.]

Kanon: Why?! Why won't it deliver?! Are you saying the <Sword Magess> blood in me is a lie? It can't be. This can't be happening! If so, why?! Why won't my sword reach the evil Demon? Answer me. Demon carrier, my "half-self", Ashley Winchester. To hunt the Demon... and get powerful, I gave up my body. And for what?

Ashley: Kanon...

[Ashley reaches out to Kanon.]

Kanon: Don't touch me! I don't want sympathy!

Ashley: There's an "Other Me" lurking inside me. It's a powerful force which can't help but destroy everything. But I believe power is neither good nor evil. It is I who willingly uses the Demon's powerful force. I wield this power for what I believe in.

Kanon: That's...

Ashley: I want to use this power to protect things important to me. I will take the evil power and turn it into my own power in order to defeat Odessa.

Kanon: .....

Ashley: Kanon... come with us. You don't have to join us. When I can't use the power of the "Other Me" then... Kanon, I want to borrow your power which carries the blood of the <Sword Magess>.

Lilka: Ashley!

Tim: Ashley!

Ashley: It's something I myself have known. Every time I fight, every time I use that power, the "Other Me" inside gets bigger. When "I" can't avoid harming what I love, I want you to cut both of us down. You Kanon, are the only one I can ask. That's why I want you on our side.

Kanon: Ashley I am...

[Judecca enters the show.]

Judecca: The show's over. Let's stop right there.

Ashley: Judecca, so, this was your plan.

Judecca: You catch on late. The preparations are done. While you were dealing with the hero nerd, I took care of things.

Kanon: Well! So, you're saying I planned that?

Judecca: I didn't expect it to go on so well. Ha. Ha. Ha. Ha.  
Whenever I'm happy, my glasses fall.

Ashley: Can you stand up, Kanon?!

Judecca: The "Demon" and "Hero" are passing dreams, a bequest from the past. Living in obscurity is so very fitting.

[Judecca raises his hand and the place starts shaking.  
He makes his escape.]

Ashley: Kanon! Wake up, Kanon!

Tim: This wound! We must treat it immediately.

Lilka: The Town of Holst is closest! Ashley!

Ashley: Oh, Kanon isn't an enemy. Our opponent is Odessa.  
Let's hurry to Holst!

-----  
~~Holst~~

[As they reach the Town of Holst, they encounter Marivel.]

Ashley: Why are you here?

Marivel: No one can heal her but me! Her illness is very interesting,  
uh... I meant severe! I don't want to leave her in anyone else's  
care.

[The party takes her to the inn.]

Marivel: Your bionic implant has gotten a little loose, it seems...  
Victor-Series bionic implants are based on living bodies,  
so misuse is expressly forbidden.

Kanon: Performing Exorcisms requires extraordinary powers. As a  
<Sword Magess> descendant, I need to get that power even if it  
meant giving up my own body.

Ashley: You didn't need to go THIS far!

Kanon: Shut UP! If I didn't do this much, I would not have become  
self-aware. You have no right...as someone possessed by a Demon.

[An explosion can be heard.]

Tim: Wh-What could that...? Ashley!

Ashley: I'll look out back! Marivel, I'll leave her with you!

Marivel: Don't worry, just go!

[The party goes out of the inn. The town is in panic and livelihoods are burning.]

Lilka: This is horrible... What happened...?

Ashley: We've got to help out!

[Judecca is standing on a cliff, looking at ARMS from above.]

Judecca: You all certainly seem to be having a rough time of things... You don't even realize how sad you look...running around like rats.

Judecca: Don't hate me, though. You have Defenders of Justice to protect you, which gives miscreants like me reason to exist. People of Holst! I have wronged, yes...but these are my accomplices!

Lilka: Th-that's not true! What are you saying!?

Voice of Kanon: An unconvincing protest...

[Kanon stands beside Judecca.]

Judecca: So you have finally appeared! I think your time has finally come.

Kanon: There is something to what you say, though. Because of who I am - descendant of the <Sword Magess> - I do need enemies such as you to defeat.

Kanon: A Hero only becomes a Hero in battle, which is where I belong. Mine is the blade that punishes evil! You have a human body, but your soul is foul as that of a devil. An appropriate target for me!

Judecca: Well, Miss Human Concealed Weapon, show me what you got!

[Kanon battles Judecca. In the middle of the battle, Kanon reaches her limit.]

Kanon: I can't believe it! Not at a time like this...

Judecca: You don't deserve to be my opponent. Better luck next time. Remember this. It will start soon. It will start VERY soon... Ha ha ha...

[Judecca disappears. Ashley and the others come to Kanon's aid.]

Marivel: Next time don't go flying off without heeding my advice!

Ashley: Your enemy is also my enemy. We should fight together, Kanon. We are comrades-in-arms.

Kanon: More now than ever.

Ashley: Well, then I'll hire you. As an Exorcist, or as a "Merc"?



Kanon: How about my reward...?

Ashley: When I can no longer restrain my "other self" insider of me...  
...you can finish me and my other self off together with your  
blade. How is that for a reward?

Kanon: It's a deal.

Marivel: I can't believe you two. Let's get back to the Valeria Chateau  
for now. We can't heal anything here well.

=====

#####  
#[1.19] Coffin of 100 Eyes #  
#####

~~Valeria Chateau~~

Irving: We've gained a brave new comrade for our coming battle with  
Odessa. I'm sure you know that she has fought bravely against  
fierce opponents before. Kanon is an Exorcist, a human  
concealed weapon... and now the fifth member of ARMS.

Ashley: Welcome to the team.  
I look forward to fighting beside you, Kanon.

Kanon: I-I... I am just here to fight with you against Odessa's  
misdeeds. Ashley Winschester...  
I am here to settle things with you!

Ashley: ... I see, oh well... I'll be sure to watch my back.

Irving: Ok, now for your next mission. We found the supply route for the  
energy produced at the Alchemic Plant. There was an energy  
pipeline heading into the desert south of Quartly.

Lilka: What would they do with energy in the desert?

Irving: There have been lots of ancient ruins found there...  
That could mean...

Ashley: They've discovered some lost technology...

Tim: And that plant is there to supply the energy for it.  
I wonder what they are trying to accomplish?

Irving: ARMS will investigate Odessa in the desert south of Quartly.  
If the situation warrants, they are to block Odessa's plans!

[Ashley, Lilka and Tim leave the room.]

Irving: It's hard to believe we are called on to act together like this.

Kanon: ..... Thus is the destiny given me by the <Sword Magess>'s  
blood coursing through my veins.

Irving: "Destiny given by blood"? Aren't you taking it a bit  
seriously... Aisha Bernadette??

Kanon: Bernadette no longer exists. I am a "Hero" descendant of the  
<Sword Magess>, no less!

[Kanon leaves.]

Irving: Maybe it is I who is taking it too far...

[They leave the Chateau.]

[TUTORIAL]: \*A human concealed weapon, Kanon has transformed her entire body to bionic implants for special powers. Her "Bionic Arm" original powers are special commands that use her concealed weapons in energy bursts. Using Bionic Arm powers in battle may cause her bionic governor to be released, giving her new powers. In addition, her artificial right eye has a sonar function for finding items or map symbols. On Filgaia map, items appear as yellow dots and destination map symbols as green dots.

<Call Menu>

Amy: >The power is being sent to a point south of Quartly. Odessa might be searching for another craft like Varukisas.

-----  
[The party searches the area south of Quartly and finds the Coffin of 100 Eyes.]

~~Coffin of 100 Eyes~~

Ashley: Something's not right.

Kanon: Hmmmm...

Lilka: Huh? What is? Why?

Tim: They might be responding to the stillness.

Ashley: ..... We traced the supply route from Alchemic Plant to here. But this silence.

Lilka: You're right.

Ashley: Either the place was abandoned at the same time the plant was destroyed or the energy supply was no longer needed.

Kanon: Or it could be one of their little traps.

Ashley: Either way, let's just continue to search. We can track down Odessa from these clues.

Lilka: Hmm...

Ashley: What is it Lilka?

Lilka: Ashley seems like Brad.

Ashley: Yeah, because until now, we've been dependent on Brad. Me too. I've really got to get my act together, even more so than before.

Otherwise I can't show my face to Brad.

Lilka: Yep, you're right.

Ashley: OK, let's start the search!

<Call Menu>

Kate: >This is Kate. Report if you find out where energy from the Alchemic Plant is being sent.

[ARMS reaches a control panel.]

[Panel]: \*DaDa, DaDaDaDaDa, DaDaDa, Da DaDa, DaDaDaDa, DaDa Da, DaDaDaDa  
Due to the Diablo Pillars resonance the energy supply is up 64%.  
"Heimdall Gazzo" ignition, stand-by. The energy problem from the  
destruction of the Alchemic Plant is cleared. Maintain the energy  
supply from the Diablo Pillar and stabilize the Heimdall Gazzo.

Ashley: The information seems vary fragmented. What are "Heimdall Gazzo"  
and "Diablo Pillar"?

[ARMS finds another control panel.]

[Panel]: DaDa, DaDaDaDaDa, DaDaDa, Da DaDa, DaDaDaDa, DaDa Da, DaDaDaDa  
The 4 "Diablo Pillars" are designed not to function  
independently, but to resonate and amplify the output. Even if  
one Pillar's destroyed, as long as the others operate, the  
generator still functions.

Ashley: Here the information gets fragmented again. I surmise that the  
generator must be very powerful. Let's get more information.

[The party moves on until they hear a familiar voice.]

Familiar Voice: "L" is the "L" of Lizard.  
"I" is for incredible.  
"Z" is for zesty.

Ashley: Who's there? I'd ask, but I already know. Why do I always get  
stuck with you?

Liz: Some kind of fate brings us two together.

Lilka: They've made an appearance-- the two with varying world views.

Liz: The young girl hurts feelings so lightly.  
She sees flaws so rightly.

Ard: Ard--Ard! Ard!

Kanon: Who are they? I can't even get mad, I feel so sick.

Liz: And to say such things during our first meeting. I'm  
disappointed you're so displeased with my amazing knowledge of  
that. Getting stuck with an idiot will be my ruin.

Kanon: I'll kill you!

Ashley: Whoa, wait Kanon. You can't take this guy seriously.

Liz: The public opinion polls rate me highly! I've tons of good traits. This is probably the only place in Filgaia where you can hear such praise! I appreciate your support.

Ard: Ard--Ard! Ard--Ard!

Liz: I've been training, so get ready to take me on! Come, look, feel. Don't get scared now. Such novices! I am feeling like playing a few tricks! A lovely explosion! Really! We are offering a journey of sleep to a far off land. Today's actions will become tomorrow's legend!

[ARMS battles Liz and Ard.]

Liz: You do such cruel things! I have no choice now but to bring out the mean machine! So, while it's sad to have to say adios, that's just the way it goes. I read somewhere how scientific progress always has victims. Anyway! Here's the nasty creature our recent battle data gave birth to! March, Arms Killer! No morals and no control! Mash 'em and smash 'em!

[BOSS: Robotic Monster Assassin - Arms Killer]

[ARMS destroys the Arms Killer.]

Liz: Even the Arms Killer everyone loved... I guess we need to finish the Bulkogidon after all! Darn you!

Ashley: Why do you stay with Odessa?! Stop conspiring with Vinsfeld!

Liz: It's none of your business who we are allied with! Ridiculous! I'm going to leave rather than get lectured! Let's go, Ard!

Ard: Ard, Ard, Ard!

[Liz & Ard run away.]

Lilka: We sure wasted a lot of time with that.

Kanon: Are they always like that?

Tim: Seems like it. That was my second encounter.

Ashley: But we did get something. I find it hard to believe they'd have military power at an abandoned site. These excavation traces are sure to reveal some significance.

[They move forward to a big control panel.]

[Big Panel: \*DaDa, DaDaDaDaDa, DaDaDa, Da DaDa, DaDaDaDa, DaDa Da, DaDaDaDa  
The energy supply from the Diablo Pillar supports the huge mass of the Heimdal Gazzo. While excessive energy consumption is seed as Heimdal Gazzo's flaw, it's nothing for the Diablo Pillar. Until all 4 Pillars are destroyed there's no way to counter its destructive force. In other words, the Diablo Pillars are the Heimdal Gazzo's lifeline.

Ashley: Heimdal Gazzo- A new force for Odessa. And the 4 Diablo Pillar generators that support it. They're a definite concern.

..... For now, let's go back to the Valeria Chateau.  
We can plan our attack against Heimdal Gazzo and the Diablo  
Pillars.

[The communicator beeps.]

-Kanon:           Whoa! What was that?!

-Tim:             I wonder what happened? Could it be an emergency?

-Lilka:           Looks like something's up.

-Ashley:          Looks like a message from the Valeria Chateau.

[Ashley answers the call.]

Ashley:          Perfect timing. I just got an important piece of info.  
Odessa was excavating the Heimdal Gazzo.  
The plant's energy must be for that.

Kate:            >No, it couldn't be that! Well, that may just be it.  
Right at your point, at your coordinates...!

Ashley:          Stop blabbering and be more specific!

Amy:             >A here. I took over for K 'cause she had to, you know.  
I detected a heat source directly above you guys! I get  
superfortress-class mass and energy pressure!  
Makes the Varukisas look like a joke!

Ashley:          How could you miss something like that till now?

Amy:             >Gosh, it's not my fault!

Ashley:          I get it. Just explain what happened.

Amy:             >They used the wizardry stealth function to shift their phase.  
The Valeria Chateau's spotting equipment is no match for that  
kind of stuff. There's more...

Ashley:          What? What is it?

Amy:             >I pinpointed the focus of the heat source's energy. Looks like  
a carrier-based Heavy ARM. It's big enough to smash you all to  
bits!

Ashley:          Why didn't you say that first? Anyway, roger. We're getting out  
of here right now. If we die, we're coming back from hell to  
haunt you!

Amy:             >Gulp! Yikes!

[The party gets out of the dungeon. A huge flying object floats above them.]  
Inside...]

Antenora:        It's on the radar. I'll blow it up on the monitor.

Ptolomea:        Wow. Very impressive.

Vinsfeld:        While the Heimdal Gazzo isn't done, it's the best excavation

weaponry. Consider it an honor, ARMS, to offer yourselves up for the testing of the "Soul Deleter".

Judecca: I wish I could have strangled them to death with my own hands.

Caina: The Heimdal Gazzo is loaded with a Heavy ARM, the "Soul Deleter". One blow rivals the light of a fixed star. It'll burn everything in its path. Those scoundrels opposing Vinsfeld's ideals best disappear now.

Antenora: Energy levels are over 75% We've reached firing levels. Arm's fixed, error's adjusted. Ready anytime!

Vinsfeld: Since the counterattacks were worse than expected... We'll wait for perfection. Raise the energy level to 120%. We will restore the light.

Judecca: So, what shall we do?

Antenora: Please wait! Energy cluster response confirmed at a location 4100 distance!

Vinsfeld: Display it on the monitor. Tha-that's impossible! How can he be alive? Didn't he die in the explosion at the plant having sacrificed himself?

[Brad is standing in the desert.  
He's equipped with a big ARM, a Rail Gun.]

Brad: I've come back home, Vinsfeld. The scar you gave me... The "Gias" around my neck won't let me die yet. As long as I'm chained to this, I'm coming back as often as I can. That's right. "Heroes" don't die! As long as they have the will to fight.

[FLASHBACK. Back when Brad was left in the Plant.]

Brad: Come on, Gias. Show me your power of destruction.

[Some Doppelgangers appear before him.]

Brad: Don't be so hasty. Soon, both you and I will be blasted by Gias. Be patient.

[The Doppelgangers transform into Brad.]

Brad: You stole my form just to battle me? ..... Oh, I get it. Hee. Hee. Ha. Ha! Perfect timing. I'm going to make use of this shape.

[Brad attacks one of the Doppelgangers.]

Brad: You can take my shape, my memories, and my skills, right? So, that "dog collar" around your neck is the same as the real one? I'm going to borrow it!

[Brad throws the Doppelganger to the plant and the Gias copy explode.  
Brad runs as fast as he can. FLASHBACK ENDS.]

Brad: Let's end this grudge I have against you here and now! This blow is my farewell to the past. It's a blow for the Slayheim

Liberation Army! It's a beacon for new battles! Take this,  
Vinsfeld Rhadamanthus.

[Brad fires the Rail Gun to the Heimdal Gazzo.]

Vinsfeld: How can such a thing happen? I won't permit it.

[The attack hits the superfortress.]

Vinsfeld: Oooou! Grrrr! You! Re-adjust the target!  
I'll make up for that failed death.  
I'll obliterate him this time!

Antenora: The generator is damaged. Refilling the "Soul Deleter" is  
impossible.

Vinsfeld: Then smash the Heimdal Gazzo on them! Does he think he can drag  
me down to Hades with him? I won't let you! I won't!

Caina: Please calm down, Sir Vinsfeld.

Vinsfeld: How can you come back alive? Are you saying you're a real  
"hero"? Are you going to say it's a miracle caused by a "hero"?

Caina: He's not "dead" nor is he a "hero"! You, Sir Vinsfeld, should  
be aware of that! Let's retreat for now. We'll regroup and wait  
for victory on the Heimdal Gazzo. Antenora!

Antenora: The reactor is off. The sub-generator has been started.  
Evacuate immediately.

Vinsfeld: Neither a "hero" nor "the dead" will be able to block our way.  
Ha. Ha. Ha. Yes. We still have our trump card. That's right.  
We still have the "Nuke".

-----  
Ashley: Brad!

Lilka: Brad!

Tim: It's not a lie is it? You're really back!

Brad: I came back to fulfill my duty as a "hero".  
It seems I can't die just yet.

Ashley: I finally understand... why we fought and beat Odessa.

Ashley: While we were powerless and frail against such a great  
destructive force... through our beliefs, we have evaded danger  
and discovered greater strength. So when one person has doubts,  
and cracks develop in our trust, it gets broken.

Ashley: ..... I want the strength to save others, so I will no  
longer doubt my friends. I'll trust them fully. So...

Brad: Somewhere along the way, I don't think I fully trusted  
you all who are now my friends. So, without going into it, it  
brought about suspicion.

Brad: ..... Listen everyone...

Kanon: ...rather than speak the truth, if there's a way to win trust... it's to move with you all. But I don't plan on having contact with you all. My goal is to exorcise the demon that possesses Ashley!

Brad: Bonds formed in battle are the strongest. That's what I learned on the battlefield. Ties have already been established between us.

=====

```
#####  
#[1.20] Destroy the Diablo Pillars #  
#####
```

~~Valeria Chateau~~

Irving: All ARMS members are present. And now... The enemy's aerial fortress, Heimdall Gazzo, is damaged and vulnerable. We must take this opportunity to deal them a mortal blow!

[Everyone nods in agreement.]

Irving: They need an energy source of massive power to keep such a thing aloft. As you discovered, the "Diablo Pillars" are their energy generators. There are four Diablo Pillars, each of which we think helps maintain the fortress,

Brad: In order to destroy Heimdall Gazzo we must eliminate the Pillars.

Irving: After the last encounter, Heimdall Gazzo has been evading our radar. If they possess the wizardry stealth function, we won't be able to locate them. However, even the wizardry stealth function has limits. A large amount of energy must be expended to keep it in place. ...In other words...

Ashley: ... What's coming next is...

Irving: Your next mission! Your mission is to silence the four Diablo Pillars that make up the generator. Once Heimdall Gazzo's energy source is eliminated, we'll see its every nook and cranny! Then our long battle with Odessa will come to an end! Be careful and don't slip up!

Ashley: ... Irving... Understood!

Irving: Alright, everyone disperse. The plan will proceed at 10:00 hours tomorrow morning. Free time until then.

-----

[Ashley returns to his room, at the bakery.  
He steps out of his room and sees Marina outside.]

Ashley: Marina... What's wrong?

Marina: We were together all day. That doesn't happen often.



Ashley: Yeah. I guess it has been a while since we did that.

Marina: You've been worried about me this whole time, haven't you?

Ashley: Have I? I didn't really notice.

Marina: Well, I did. Say, Ashley...

Ashley: Yes?

Marina: You act like you have a big mission coming up soon.

Ashley: ..... I do, Marina. I wasn't hiding it from you.  
It's just that...

Marina: I know. I'm a burden to you, Ashley. You're fighting to save everyone, but I'm just holding you back, right? I'm keeping you from focusing on your mission, Ashley.

Ashley: Now listen, Marina. I'm much stronger than before. I'm far stronger than I was even a little while ago. But I'm not talking about the strength to fight Odessa. I'm talking about the strength to live through this mess and make it home to where I belong.

Marina: I just feel like you're going farther and farther away from me. I wish I could be strong, too. Strong enough to hold out until we can be together forever, Ashley.

Ashley: Well, then, let's be stronger together, Marina! I will be strong enough to survive until this is over. You, Marina, must be strong enough to save me a place to come home to.

Marina: Can you do it? I can't become strong like you overnight, Ashley.

Ashley: Don't worry. You can do it. It's easy. Watch.  
See, Marina? Just hold your hands apart like this.

[Ashley hugs Marina...]

Ashley: This is all the space I need to come home to. Just this tiny world in your arms, Marina... This small space is the most important in all Filgaia.

[They break the hug.]

Marina: You're right. It's easy.

Ashley: See? Being strong is easy when we're together.

[Marina turns away from Ashley.]

Marina: ... No, not that. I meant it's easy to express my deepest feelings to the man I care for. It's a lot tougher than I thought.

Ashley: I'll be back. I promise...

Marina: And I'll be waiting for you.

-----  
[The five ARMS members walk to the entrance of the Chateau,  
where every important crew of the Chateau are gathered.]

Irving: Finally, we won't have to deal with Odessa any longer! Yes, but that will hardly be the end of our struggles! As long as Filgaia exists, your battles won't end! So, Fight to win, but also to live and return. We're depending on you, everyone.

Ashley: It is not just us who is fighting. All these members, as well as everyone in Filgaia, are fighting Odessa! With everyone's help, we cannot help but be victorious! ... Live to return...

Irving: Fight as a team. We're really fighting together. I, too, will fight for Filgaia! Together with everyone!!

<Call Menu>

Amy: >I can't pinpoint 'em, but the Diablo Pillars are located... near the Sielje Region, near Guild Galad, and outside of Baskar Village. Maybe the people around there can tell you more. Oh, there's another on an island north of Meria... The last one can't even be reached by sea or land. How are you going to get there?

-----  
/Diablo Pillar Ptolomea/

~~~~~

[The party finds the Diablo Pillar on the outer sea. It is on what seems like a sunken island near the Sielje Region.]

~~Diablo Pillar Ptolomea~~

[They move forward until they encounter a boss on the 7th level.]

Brad: A Summons Trap of confinement. What would he do in this situation? Would he get out right away or because he had people behind him he had to protect, would he... No. That's not right. It's because he trusted those following him, he was able to get out right away. I need to take a lesson from him.

[BOSS: Explosive Emperor Monster - Belleclaire]

[ARMS defeats the explosive emperor.

They move on and find Ptolomea waiting at the top of the Pillar.]

Ptolomea: Wow, what a shock. That the last little yearling got this far.

Ashley: We couldn't just stand around and do nothing! That's why we got strong and made our way this far!

Lilka: Change it into power. My power of "desire" is stronger than anyone痴!

Ptolomea: Ha! Don't make me laugh! You act so self-righteous!

Kanon: What'd you say? How dare you!

Ptolomea: Try some of your justice out on me if you dare! I'll stop you all. I'll pulverize you! What's the point in keeping the world as it is today?! The world's just convenient for those in power. For us, it's just a suffocating place! I promised my men we'd create a free world! My men and I will reclaim this wasted world and seek out our own heaven! No compromises with my desire. I too will become strong and crush you all!

[ARMS fights and then wins against Ptolomea.]

Ptolomea: ..... Tell me one thing. Are you guys right? Is justice on your side, the side of the winner? Either way, this is the end of the road for me. I can barely stand anymore.

[The Pillar generator breaks.]

Ptolomea: Promise me one thing. Please treat my men with leniency. I know it's self-serving, but... I was the one who made them do what they did. It was all my fault.

Brad: Sure. Promises made on the battlefield have to be kept.

Ptolomea: Bonds formed in battle are the strongest. I'm glad I got to meet you. You really are a "hero". I beg you. Do something before Vinsfeld goes ballistic. You're the only one I can trust to look after my troops.

[Ptolomea disappears.]

Tim: He wasn't really a bad person after all.

Kanon: That's why he could risk his life on the battlefield.

Lilka: And that's why it's so sad.

-----  
/Diablo Pillar Antenora/

????????????????????????????

[ARMS finds the Diablo Pillar in a forest, near Baskar Village. It's reachable by the Hovercraft.]

~~Diablo Pillar Antenora~~

[On the 5th level of the Pillar, Antenora presents a puzzle for ARMS.]

Antenora: I'm going to test your memory. Memorize the correct pattern. It's a spell to block the road. A barrier to expel intruders!

[They got past it. On the 7th level, the encounter a boss.]

Lilka: You plan to not let us go? Sorry, pal. Nothing you do, will work because I've got magical powers. Magic is a power that can do anything. I'm going to do it all, too, just like my older sister!

[BOSS: Humanoid Mirage - Prisnum]

[The party defeats Prisnum. They reach the 11th level where Antenora

presents another puzzle.]

Antenora: If you move the wrong switch, you have to do it again,  
Go for it... There is only one truth within a number of  
mistakes. Can you say with confidence that the path you have  
chosen is the right one?

[They got past the puzzle and continue to move on until they encounter  
Antenora waiting on the 13th level.]

Ashley: Get out of my way! Though she's an Odessa officer, if possible,  
I'd rather not fight with that woman.

Antenora: You're so naive. I have my reasons for being here and am ready  
to die if I must.

Kanon: So, you're saying you won't retreat.

Antenora: He's watching... because Vinsfeld's watching.

Brad: How admirable of you. But if you attack, we have no choice but  
to respond. We'll give it our best shot!

Antenora: Vinsfeld is watching me stand here on the battlefield. So, to  
meet his expectations I will have to fight you. I'm not  
protecting the Diablo Pillar! I'm protecting the feelings in my  
heart! Everything started that day. It was all for the feelings  
in my heart! Now! Come!

[ARMS fights and then wins against Antenora.]

Antenora: It's over. It's all going to be over now. The pain that has  
been concealed in my heart has finally been given form.  
I need for him to see how I look right now.  
I need Vinsfeld to see.

[The Pillar's generator breaks apart.]

Lilka: Are you and Vinsfeld?

Antenora: Ha. Ha. Me? And that man? Ha! Ha! Ha! You make me laugh!  
You've got it all wrong. It's the opposite. I despise that man.  
I want revenge!

Ashley: Revenge? Then why'd you...

Antenora: Both my mother and father were killed by that man. They were  
killed just because they were connected to the Slayheim Royal  
Family. That man Vinsfeld who lead the Slayheim Liberation  
Army-- He killed my parents. But my powers alone weren't  
strong enough to destroy that man.

Kanon: So you joined forces with the enemy? It makes no sense.

Antenora: Didn't I already tell you? This is my revenge. This was the  
biggest revenge I could take on the man who took everything from  
me.

Tim: .....

Antenora: I did everything I could to get that man to love me.  
All the sins I committed, all the pain I suffered, was to steal  
his heart. Vinsfeld came seeking my heart and my body.  
I have come to occupy a large place in his heart.

Brad: .....

Antenora: What will happen to his heart if I am destroyed by you all?  
I can imagine the expression on his face when he hears I have  
been destroyed. Ha. Ha. Ha. Ha. By stealing his valuable "Me".  
I get my revenge.

[Antenora disappears.]

Lilka: Revenge! I still believe she had strong feelings for Vinsfeld.

Kanon: To love and hate are flip sides of the same coin.  
It's giving form to gaining strength from one's strong desires.

Lilka: I wonder which one I am? I really can't tell.

-----  
          
/Diablo Pillar Caina/

????????????????????

[ARMS finds the Diablo Pillar near Guild Galad. It is reachable only  
by the Valeria Chateau.]

~~Diablo Pillar Caina~~

[They move forward until they encounter a boss on the 7th level.]

Pooka: Tim!

Tim: You're right. I know! Someone's trying to make sure we don't  
get there first.

Pooka: I feel it too. This evil... it's no ordinary person.

Tim: I'm not going to be beaten. I'm determined to get strong!  
It might be impossible alone, but with you all behind me, and  
Pooka behind me I knew I could get stronger!

[BOSS: Shapeless Slime Monster - Drawdo]

[ARMS defeats the slime. They move forward and find Caina waiting at the  
top of the Pillar.]

Ashley: Get out of my way! An aerial fortress... You all don't need a  
toy like that!

Brad: Once the energy output from the Diablo Pillars is blocked...  
Heimdall Gazzo cannot go. That's what I'm going to do!

Caina: You act so self-righteous. I hate that. It's so irritating.  
That outlaw scum opposing Sir Vinsfeld's ideals for Odessa.  
Hey, "Randolph"! How about feeding these guys to a space-time  
distortion?!

[ARMS fights and then defeats Caina.]

Caina: Impossible! To lose to guys who have no ideals and no protocol.  
I can't die in a place like this. No way! For the future of  
Filgaia, the Filgaia ruled by Vinsfeld, I must carry on.

[The Pillar's generator breaks.]

Caina: Hey, Randolph the Magic Key! One last time, give me strength.  
I'm not going to let it end here an now, like this.

[A space-time distortion gate appears behind Caina.]

Caina: "Randolph"... What is the meaning of this?

Caina: Wooooooooo!

[Caina and Randolph get sucked by the distortion.]

Tim: We won, didn't we?

Ashley: Yep.

Tim: We're the ones who destroyed those pure ideals so easy to  
believe in.

Brad: Just because they're pure doesn't mean they're right. Sometimes  
purity can narrow your view of the world. A path of uncertainty  
and confusion may have failures, but it'll never be wrong.

Tim: That's true.

Ashley: Let's go. Odessa's treachery hasn't been obliterated yet.

-----  
/Diablo Pillar Judecca/

~~~~~

~~Quartly~~

[ARMS gathers information regarding the location of the last pillar.  
They talk so the people in Quartly.]

@Man in the entrance: If you find an abandoned city buried in salt on the  
northern plain, you must stay away! It is what's left of  
Archeim, heart of the former Slayheim Kingdom.

@Woman: North of Quartly was Archeim, once the largest city in Slayheim.  
I use the past tense because Archeim is a city of the past.  
A lost city.

[They leave Quartly and go to Archeim.]

~~Lost City Archeim~~

[They explore the lost city.]

Ashley: What? What's this chill?

Kanon: The stench of death... Only suitable for the lost city.

Regardless, it's not well-suited to the world of the living.

[Something appears before them.]

Tim: I can't sense any life waves! This must be...

Lilka: Eeeeeee... So, you're the ghost's manager. I'll destroy you, so promise me that you won't show up again.

[BOSS: Aggressive Poltergeist - Jasoul]

[After a while, the party eliminates the poltergeist. They move on until they reach a Live Reflector at the end of the dungeon. They use it and it takes them to the "Snake Road".]

[ARMS follows the long road and finds the Diablo Pillar at the end of it.]

~~Diablo Pillar Judecca~~

[At the 5th level, ARMS finds a boss.]

Kanon: Here they come. This will be interesting. I'm destined for this. This monster is about to get Exorcised! Come on! Come on! Come on! The blood in me is boiling! And the destiny I bear is wailing. I'll show you what the descendant of a "hero" can do.

[BOSS: Red-Hot Lava Monster - Magmalizer]

[The party destroys Magmalizer. They move on until they encounter Judecca at the topmost level of the Pillar.]

Judecca: Yup. Yup. Yup. They're here. They are finally here. This makes me so happy. I'm so excited my glasses are about to fall off again.

Ashley: I've got you now! Your schemes and your traps won't work with us anymore. Let's settle this fair and square.

Judecca: Fair and square? I'm glad you brought that up. To make this little game more fun, all I did was give you guys a small handicap. I did it to prolong your agony and to watch you get caught in a trap.

Kanon: What'd you say!?

Judecca: If I had a hand in your demise, we would have settled this long ago. You don't seem to understand. There's no point to it.

Tim: A person's life... People are doing their best to live well, but you toy with them like that. I can't forgive you for having no compassion for other's pain. I won't forgive you!

Judecca: Looks like the little brat is getting into adult business. If you want sympathy, at the very least cry in a cute little voice. Working under Vinsfeld did guarantee one would never be bored. Even if I didn't do anything, Vinsfeld would get me a place to play. All I wanted to do is play! It's fun! It's too much fun! Yah! Yah! Yah! I'd follow you nywhere, Vinsfeld! My needs are met when I'm with you.

[ARMS battles and then wins against Judecca.]

Judecca: I've been had. I blew it at the execution site. What a fool!  
Are you happy? Did you have fun? You must have since you won.  
Ahhhhh!

[The pillar's generator breaks.]

Judecca: These battles over life... It's all just play. No need to get so  
defensive. What a bore you are. I'm disappointed in you.

Kanon: You were defeated because you didn't leave the arena of play.  
One who doesn't risk his life isn't qualified to play with lives.

Ashley: I was taught that you'd lose your life if you hesitate in battle.  
But I wouldn't want to become someone who didn't hesitate to take  
a life.

Judecca: Darn! This is making me crazy! I'm not done playing yet.  
I was looking orward to seeing how the world would meet its end.

[Judecca shoots himself and falls all the way down.]

Kanon: You didn't want to get hurt, so you hurt others to protect  
yourself. It's "human" to not hesitate taking another's life  
when you're protecting your own.

Lilka: Then "humans" are weak and fickle.

Ashley: No need to give in to weakness, but to live strongly.  
I think that's the ideal for "humans" to strive for.

=====

```
#####  
#[1.21] Take Down Heimdal Gazzo #  
#####
```

[ARMS leaves the last Diablo Pillar. Irving contacts them.]

Irving: >well done, everyone! Cutting off the energy supply from the  
Diablo Pillars has disabled the stealth function. Heimdal Gazzo  
is now naked to the world and showing up on our radar! Heimdal  
Gazzo has come to a stop far south of Sielje! We can't waste  
this chance!! Hurry back to Valeria Chateau!  
We're going to try to force Heimdal Gazzo to land!

<Call Menu>

Kate: >All Diablo Pillars are down. The Heimdal Gazzo is still  
hovering south of Sielje. Go and destroy Odessa!

[ARMS flies the Valeria Chateau and finds the Heimdal Gazzo floating in the  
skies south of Sielje Region. They enter Odessa's superfortress.]

Ashley: We'll settle our battle with Odessa right here and now. But more  
importantly, every one of us has to return from here safely.

Ashley: Lilka.



Ashley: Brad.

Ashley: Tim.

Ashley: Kanon.

Ashley: The five of us are good only when all five of us are together. We can keep fighting against Odessa because there are five of us. So, when we destroy Odessa, it'll be all five of us together. If anyone was missing, I'm sure we'd feel the loss.

[Lilka, Brad, Tim, and Kanon nod.]

Ashley: We won't overdo it. If we need to, we can always return to the Valeria Chateau from here. Ok, everyone. Let's go!

[ARMS moves forward until they find Vinsfeld standing in the control room.]

Vinsfeld: So, you've come this far. You're trying to cut into Odessa's ideals.

Ashley: So, you're Odessa's leader, Vinsfeld Rhadamanthus.

Brad: Vinsfeld, this is as far as your treachery goes! I, no we, are going to put a stop to your foolish ambitions. I promised "Him" and Ptolomea that I'd stop you before you run wild. I'm going to stop you for the Liberation Army you betrayed as well.

Vinsfeld: Don't make me mad! Someone as deluded as you is going to stop me? Don't make me laugh! Even if you are a "hero", you can't stop me! Besides, I have my own personal grudge against you all. How dare you kill my Antenora. I will never forgive you. Your death won't be quick. Come on!

Vinsfeld: Our ideals aren't so simple that the likes of you could put a stop to it. You won't leave here alive. My sword, "Mad Mountains", will take care of you. Consider it an honor to get slaughtered by Odessa's leader.

[BOSS: Leader of Odessa - Vinsfeld]

Vinsfeld: Ideas, Values, Consciousness, and Power... Put all that together and people will get stronger. That's progress for the future. Odessa will guide Filgaia to the next era. We are pioneers! Are you telling me to be prepared to let the stupid, ignorant masses get in my way? Definitely not! We with the Wolf Fangs will be the ones to open the way to the next era. Ideals won't yield! They'll never die.

[ARMS battles against Vinsfeld. They get him on his knees.]

Vinsfeld: I won't accept that the ideals will die like this. You fools! At this rate, you'll be greeting your human limitations. To resist the monsters, everyone's power has to be united as one. That's the best way to take on the menace that'll be coming this way.

Ashley: The monsters... Ridiculous! It was Odessa that manipulated the monsters and made them flow from the earth.

Vinsfeld: That's true. We used the monsters as soldiers. We used them in the "Demon Summoning" you're well acquainted with. But think about it. How could we release so many monsters in such a short time? What's the point in creating monsters we can't control without some plan?

Ashley: Then it's...

Vinsfeld: It's not us. It's an advance guard of some different threat.

Ashley: The advance guard of a different threat?

Vinsfeld: Ha. Ha. Ha. Ha. Ha!

[The place starts to shake.]

Ashley: What?!

Vinsfeld: I will fall along with my ideals. And you too can fall with the Heimdal Gazzo!

[Vinsfeld disappears.]

Brad: The power reactor is overloaded. At this rate...

Tim: What's going to happen?

Kanon: It'll be crushed to smithereens and we will be, too.

Lilka: But you won't let him do that, right? Ashley!

Ashley: Of course! An aerial fortress this large has to have some escape pods. Let's find them.

[They move forward to the next room.]

Ashley: Looks like we need to use this control panel to... operate the escape devices. All five escape devices are in different locations.

Brad: So that means it's impossible for us to all escape at once. To get so far and then have this happen... we've sure got bad luck.

Tim: What are we going to do?

Ashley: I'll take care of this! Hurry up and get to the escape devices. Hurry! We've got no time!

Kanon: We won't leave until you promise us you'll get out of here alive, too.

Ashley: Sure, I promise. I'm not going to just die in vain, not right before your very eyes.

Lilka: Promise, Ashley. We all promised to return together, so you've got to keep your promise!

[Brad, Lilka, Tim, and Kanon gets on their positions.]

Ashley: Everyone set?

Brad: No problem here.

Lilka: All OK. Don't forget your promise.

Tim: Don't worry. Ashley, prepare for launch too.  
There isn't much time.

Kanon: No problem here. The rest is up to you.

Ashley: Prepare for launch. Face forward. I'll get out soon too.  
See you all on land!

[Lilka makes it to her escape pod.]

Lilka: I finally made it. But I don't like being alone.  
We've always been together. We have to all be together.

[She moves forward.]

Lilka: No! You got to be kidding! This place is locked too.  
Do something! My magic alone can't do anything.

Ashley: >Lilka, Lilka! Calm down! Focus your ear on my voice.  
I'll release the escape pod lock now, so calm down and wait.  
The Emphatite in the communicator binds us, so you're not alone.  
You're hearing my voice, right? Your voice is reaching me.  
So you'll be fine.

[The lock on Lilka's pod releases.]

Lilka: The Emphatite? Wai...Wait! Don't go looking in any places you  
shouldn't be, OK? Because there's so much I haven't told you  
yet. ....

Lilka: But... thanks for cheering me up. I'm all right, now  
that I'm with you. I'm fine and dandy!

[Brad makes it to his escape pod.]

Brad: The overload running wild on the Heimdal Gazzo is making it  
creak. It won't be long now. Soon, we will put an end to the  
war with Odessa.

[Brad moves forward to his pod and finds a barrier on his way.  
He tries to kick it but it's still there.]

Brad: But we have no obligation to Vins. We have to survive.  
There's a wilderness I need to cross alive to create a future  
with no wars.

Ashley: >Brad, Brad! Can you hear my voice? I can hear the voice of  
Brad's heart from the communicator. The Emphatite is uniting our  
hearts. I'm all right. I can operate the escape pod panel from  
here. That's right. We're not finished yet. We still have so  
much left to do.

[The lock on Brad's pod releases.]

Brad:           The Emphatite takes the heart... A miracle... If he's a "hero",  
it's not unusual for this to happen. I'm leaving it up to you.  
I'm going to bed a bit before you.

[Tim makes it to his escape pod.]

Tim:            So this is the escape pod. I wonder if everyone arrived safely?  
I don't know how to release the lock on the escape pod.  
What should I do? What can I do?

[Tim moves forward.]

Tim:            I'm not giving up! I can't blow it here. Hold your heart  
strong. I'm going to become strong so I can protect everyone.

Pooka:          That's right. Despair destroys all hope, and that negates any  
possibilities for the future! Tim, you're not weak. Your  
persistent strength will reach the future.

Ashley:         >Tim! I can hear the sound of your heart from the transmitter!  
The Emphatite us uniting our hearts! It's all right.  
I'll undo the escape pod's lock now, so get in and wait, OK?

Tim:            I can hear it. I can hear Ashley's voice clearly!  
I understand! I'll wait in the escape pod. Please hurry,  
Ashley.

[Kanon makes it to her escape pod.]

Kanon:          I finally reached the escape pod. I'm going to pray that this  
escape pod doesn't turn into my casket. I mean, how tacky.

[Kanon moves forward.]

Kanon:          The barometric pressure is changing so quickly! What's  
happening? It can't be! We're not falling! It's just the  
opposite of that. The ship's engineers are sending the Heimdal  
Gazzo to the heavens. No, we're ascending to a sea of stars!  
At this rate we'll...

Ashley:         >Kanon, Kanon! It's me, Ashley! It's the voice of your heart.  
The emphatite in the communicator lead me here! The altitude  
of the Heimdal Gazzo is rising rapidly! But don't give up!  
We can't be finished off now, not like this!

[The lock on Kanon's pod releases.]

Kanon:          I can hear your heart's voice, too. You're right. It can't end.  
I can hear it, too. Mixed in your heart's voice is the howl of  
the Demon. Don't worry. I'm the one who will exorcise it out of  
you. That's why you need to survive no matter what. Got it?

[Back at the control panel, where Ashley is...]

Ashley:         It's all set. There's no time left. We have to hurry or  
else....

Vinsfeld:       Oh, here you are, you scoundrel.

Ashley: Vinsfeld!

Vinsfeld: I want an answer. Why do you not die along with your ideals? Why do you persist in living?

Ashley: I have a place to return home to and people to return to, as well. I have someone special waiting for me, too. I have fought to bring back the daily life we all once enjoyed.

Vinsfeld: You say "daily life"? How absurd! You'd shred our ideals just for that?

Ashley: In my nineteen years, I have found nothing else worth risking my life.

Vinsfeld: It's not over. I can't let it be over.

Ashley: It's over. The ideals of Odessa! The desire for world domination! Your madness too.

Vinsfeld: Ashley Winschester! Only you!

[Ashley fights and defeats Vinsfeld.]

Vinsfeld: I'm finished. I never even imagined it. For the end to visit me is something that was never supposed to happen. But that's all right. If you want to end the party, I'll give you "an end of life"!

Ashley: What do you have up your sleeve?

Vinsfeld: I'm finished, but you're finished too. And Filgaia's finished as well.

Ashley: "Nuke"! Are you planning to launch the strategic nuclear weapon you stole from Guild Galad?

Vinsfeld: Ha. Ha. Ha. That's right. That's exactly right! Everything will come to an end with my end. The party must end.

[A beam of light releases upward from the Heimdal Gazzo.  
Creating a glyph on Filgaian Subspace.]

Ashley: What did you do, Vinsfeld? You didn't--

Vinsfeld: It's a nuclear weapons landing pad. It's our trump card--the Grauswein! It was launched before completion, so there's no way to predict when the nuke will fall on Filgaia. One week later? Or one month later a nuclear blaze could blow. It could come tomorrow. Live in fear. There's nothing you can do but live under the threat of ruin.

Ashley: Lilka, Brad, Tim, Kanon... Let's all save our Filgaia from nuclear weapons. Please, get there in time! Come on, Escape Pod! Filgaia needs the ARMS! So, we must...

[Ashley is surrounded by light.]

Ashley: Wooooooooo!

Vinsfeld: It's the "Burial of an Era". Everything will be buried, all by Vinsfeld's hands.

Ashley: (Emphatite, please tell Marina I'm sorry. I won't be able to keep my promise.)

[That night, Marivel and Marina are standing on a rooftop.]

Marina: Are those shooting stars?

Marivel: Wishing upon a star is so silly. C'mon, tell me what you wished for. If you wish for too much, the star won't make it come true.

Marina: I didn't wish for much. Just that everyone makes it through the fighting safely.

Marivel: Well, I'm sure the star can handle a wish like that.

[Meanwhile, the four escape pods have landed safely on Filgaia. Lilka, Brad, Tim, and Kanon are together.]

Lilka: All of us promised that we would return home together... Why is there always one person who breaks their promise?

[Meanwhile, Ashley is drifting on the sea of stars...]

-----

/~~~~~/  
/[2] RESISTANCE LINE /  
/\_\_\_\_\_/  
/

#####  
#[2.01] The Memory Maze #  
#####

[Marina is standing outside the Valeria Chateau. Altaecia approaches her.]

Altaecia: Here again today, too.

Marina: I wonder if I can reach Ashley from here.

Altaecia: Don't worry. You will. However far away someone is, the strength of your feelings will draw them closer.

Marina: You are strong for believing such a thing, Altaecia. Is there someone you are missing?

Altaecia: Maybe I can't believe, but I want to desperately. And even when we're close, he feels far away.

Marina: Is this doing any good? You can hear me somehow, can't you? Come back to me soon... Ashley...

-----

[Ashley is standing somewhere.]

Ashley: I'm alive. I'm...? Where am I? This isn't Filgaia. It's not a rational deduction, but I'm certain this isn't

Filgaia. Where am I?

[A girl approaches him.]

A Girl Seen Before: That's right. This isn't the world you were before.

Ashley: Aren't you... That's right. It's not the first time we meet. When I got the Argetlahm, in the light we... It's the same feeling of protection I got when the Heimdal Gazzo exploded. I'm certain of it. That sensation was the same as the vibrations I get from you now. Please tell me. Who are you?

A Girl Seen Before: Anastasia. In your era, I guess the <Sword Magess> is the name most well known.

Ashley: So, you're the <Sword Magess>.

Anastasia: Ha. Ha. I had always hoped we'd have a chance to talk, Ashley Winchester.

[They start walking.]

Anastasia: I've always been watching you.

Ashley: You've been watching me?

Anastasia: Yes. Always. There were moments when you were a bit pathetic, but then you'd do something very bold and brave! But with her... With Marina, you weren't brave or forthcoming.

Ashley: Um, Marina is actually...

Anastasia: Well, well, you're blushing. How sweet. It makes a big sister want to take you in her arms and take care of you.

Ashley: .....

Anastasia: What? You're not mad, are you? Sorry. I didn't mean to hassle you.

Ashley: No, I'm not mad. But it's um, well unexpected. The image I had of the <Sword Magess> was well.... A little different...

Anastasia: That's so selfish. So you think it's OK to just force your will on everyone?

Ashley: What?

Anastasia: Disappointed? Well, this is the real "me". Even your older sister thinks about guys sometimes. Before I was the <Sword Magess> I was just a girl called Anastasia. I can't help it.

Ashley: Yeah.

Anastasia: Want to go home? Do you want to go to Filgaia, to the world where Marina is waiting for you?

Ashley: Just as I suspected... This isn't Filgaia.

[Anastasia and Ashley reach a place that looks like the ruins of a temple.]

Anastasia: If the world of the living is "this side", and the world of the... dead is "the other side", then this is the interval, the boundary between both places. Welcome to the world where Anastasia is! Here memories from when I lived in Filgaia remain. It's a ruin of memories. I might be able to make contact with Filgaia from here. If you can imagine Filgaia intensely, then...

~~Memory Maze~~

[A light comes from above. A wolf appears.]

Anastasia: This is Lucied, the Guardian of Desire.

Ashley: Guardian Lucied was, if I recall...

Anastasia: Right, the Guardian is the mind of the former ruler. There's no reason it'd be accompanied by a body. But this one is flesh and blood. It has enough strength to maintain a body. And with that power, they've always protected me...

Ashley: ...the Argetlahm and the Guardian of Desire, Lucied. This is the power that has supported the <Sword Magess>.

Anastasia: From here on is the "Space" created from my memory. Memories are matter from the past. Everything is from the conscious world... existence equals reality.

Ashley: ????

Anastasia: If you go, you'll understand. What happened here will be remembered as reality by my "memory" time axis.

[Ashley, Anastasia and Lucied move forward until they reach an invisible wall. Ashley activates a switch and a girl in a cape drops down.]

Young Girl's Voice Heard Somewhere: What is it? Who are you? It's dangerous here. It's in your best interest to leave as soon as possible.

Anastasia: No. This one is the same as us. They've taken on the burden to fight.

Young Girl's Voice Heard Somewhere: Oh, so you're a friend of Anastasia? A bit narrow-minded, I'd say. Are they really reliable? I guess it'll be OK. As long as you don't hold Anastasia back.

[The girl moves on.]

Ashley: That kid is...

Anastasia: That kid is a friend who fought alongside me in another time. Through my memory, you have experienced the past. This isn't a dream. As proof, this chance meeting was perceived in the past as reality itself.

[They move forward and find a white crystal. Ashley touches it. It shows them a fiery scene with a winged demon.]

Ashley: The battle about to be introduced is the "Blaze of Disaster".



Anastasia: Yeah. It's not just a story. It's a battle that actually happened.

Ashley: ..... This sad sensation. It's not the first time I've felt this! It's a part of that other me, isn't it? That's it, right?

[Anastasia nods.]

Anastasia: I sacrificed myself to trap the Blaze of Disaster. That which is within you now is Lord Blazer, the Blazing Demon who once tried to consume the world.

[The scene ends.]

Ashley: My powers...

Anastasia: These cursed powers of destruction are the Blaze of Disaster itself. But power itself is neither good nor evil. It depends on the will of the power's user. Right now, the power within you may just be necessary for my beloved Filgaia. Let's go before it's all too late.

[Ashley's party moves forward and finds the caped girl looking at them behind one of the pillars.]

Young Girl's Voice Heard Somewhere: You!!! You're not holding Anastasia back, are you? Oh, come on. I'm not going to use your power! With the <Sword Magess> and Crimson Noble in me, Blazer's..

Anastasia: This person's power is Lord Blazer himself.

Young Girl's Voice Heard Somewhere: What? What did you say just now?

Anastasia: Inside this person, in his interior space, dwells the Lord Blazer.

Young Girl's Voice Heard Somewhere: Then you seek revenge on someone from Filgaia? Get away from Anastasia right now!

Anastasia: This person is the future Lord Blazer, not the one of our time. He's not an enemy. Please understand.

Young Girl's Voice Heard Somewhere: ..... If Anastasia says so, then...

[The caped girl moves on. Ashley & Co. move on as well and find another white crystal. It shows them a scene with Anastasia and Argetlahm.]

Anastasia: I don't know why I was able to hold the Argetlahm in my hands. I was just an ordinary girl who until then believed sword training was dumb. I'd never had a sword.

Ashley: But, in reality, you fought and beat Lord Blazer.

Anastasia: I went all out. But it wasn't because I wanted to "win". It was because I didn't want to lose the people I loved. Besides, I personally hate death. I really didn't want to die. Well, that disqualifies you as a Magess. Rather than worrying about the world, I was thinking of myself and my family.

Ashley: Those thoughts might be similar to mine.

Anastasia: There are no special qualifications necessary to get the Argetlahm. Because I have the blood of the Valeria family doesn't make me a "hero". Was anyone else in my family able to get hold of the Argetlahm? There's no significance in the blood of the Valeria Family.

Ashley: ..... Just now...you said...

Anastasia: My family... I said there's no significance that I'm a blood relative of the Valeria Family.

[The scene ends.]

[Meanwhile, Irving is dreaming about his past.]

[In the Sword Cathedral, Irving is trying to pull the Argetlahm out of the rock. He tries pulling it with his strength but it is futile. He touches the edge of the blade to pour his blood, the Valeria blood, on it then he creates a glyph. It doesn't work either, instead the Argetlahm countered him with a shock that throws him backwards to the wall.]

Irving: Why... Why do you reject me, Argetlahm? I am a true descendant of the <Sword Magess>. I am a Valeria.

[It seems that the shock caused the injury on his leg, which explains why he is on crutches in the present. He crawls back to the Guardian Blade.]

Irving: Whoa!!

[The dream ends. Irving wakes up on his bed in Valeria Chateau.]

Irving: Just another dream about that time. Why do I have to keep having these nightmares over and over again?

Voice of Alteacia: Irving... Irving! Is something wrong, Irving?

[Irving gets up from bed and Altaecia goes near him.]

Altaecia: Irving, I heard a noise. Is anything wrong?  
I heard a loud voice...

[Irving holds Altaecia.]

Altaecia: (Irving...)

[Back in the Memory Maze...]

Anastasia: I don't understand. Why does everyone obsess about "heroes"?  
Heroes are merely sacrifices made to confront absolute danger.

Ashley: A sacrificial offering... Marina said the same thing.

[They move on and encounters the caped girl again.]

Young Girl's voice Heard Somewhere: My whole family was burnt to death because of him! I am alone, all alone. Even though I'm alone, I plan to protect Filgaia.

Ashley: I too am someone who likes Filgaia very much. You're not alone.  
Let's fight together.

[The girl moves on. The party moves on and touches another crystal.  
It shows them a scene where Anastasia and Lucied are walking in a dungeon.]

Anastasia: What's different about me is that I didn't give in to "despair".

Ashley: "Despair"?

Anastasia: Right. Everyone feels it with the Blaze of Disaster. Even though Lord Blazer killed all hope, I never lost the desire to live.

Anastasia: Hmm... I mean, I still wanted to eat lots of good food and have fun with my friends. I didn't want to let go of "life" so easily. That's what was "special". I think my power was from "desire". I don't really remember my first encounter with Lucied. Eventually he was always by my side, but soon he became a presence I couldn't do without. That's Lucied for you.

Anastasia: A long time ago he told me that it was my willpower that gave Lucied his power. I think "desire" is simply the power of the will to live? Power is neither good nor bad. Never deny it just because it's full of "desire". What saved Filgaia from the Blaze of Disaster was "desire".

[The scene ends.]

Ashley: The truth is... what I had been told all along and what I imagined is not the total truth.

Anastasia: I am...

Anastasia: The <Sword Magess> is not only a hero only by convenience. She is a sacrificial offering to this era. Her decorated body is a good camouflage. If that's not done, those who survived cannot feel good about the sacrifice. That's what it means to obtain excessive power. This is applicable to you now too. And yet you still want to go back to Filgaia?

Ashley: Yes.

Anastasia: You say that with no hesitation. I give up. OK. You win. OK, I'll go. Soon, my memory will be interrupted.

[The move forward and encounters the girl with a familiar voice again.]

Young Girl's Voice Heard Somewhere: Anastasia risked her life to trap Lord Blazer. Trapped...that's all. He was not destroyed. He was just trapped behind the event horizon. Our powers aren't strong enough to destroy him now.

Ashley: If not today, maybe tomorrow. And if not tomorrow, then another day. Tomorrow we will be stronger than we were yesterday, so...

Young Girl's Voice Heard Somewhere: What has been trapped will one day be released. "Let's fight together". That's what you said. Can your word be trusted?

Ashley: Of course.

Young Girl's Voice Heard Somewhere: Then it's a promise. When the Lord Blazer's powers once again begin to destroy Filgaia...  
...we'll fight together to destroy and vanquish him from Filgaia completely.

[Ashley nods.]

Young Girl's Voice Heard Somewhere: I'm so relieved to hear that. The lives of the immortal Crimson Nobles are eternal. Until you and I meet again, I will have to take a break.

[Ashley & Co. move forward and reach a room with another white crystal.]

Anastasia: My "memory" goes no further. It becomes a world of emptiness. But if you imagine, will all your powers into the Filgaia you wish to return to, the road will appear.

Ashley: The Filgaia I will return to... The world I'm in...It's...

=====

```
#####  
#[2.02] Rescue Ashley Winchester #  
#####
```

[Irving, Kate, and Amy are in the Chateau's bridge.]

Kate: It's very faint, but there's no mistaking it. It's the Emphatite pattern from Ashley's communicator.

Irving: Can you calculate its position?

Kate: It's hard to say. The signal is so faint we ordinarily wouldn't even receive it. It will take time. Also...

Amy: With Filgaia in the state it's in...

Irving: Please do your best. I will gather the ARMS members now.

Kate: Understood.

Amy: I will try, too!

[Irving gathers the 4 ARMS members. And tells them the current situation.]

Irving: That is all we know at the moment.

Lilka: In other words, Ashley might still be alive.

Irving: Yes.

Tim: I didn't mean to ruin the mood. But if the signal is so faint we can't locate its source, how will we conduct a rescue?

Irving: You are correct. We don't have an exact point yet. But, we do know the general area. We have no other choice...

Brad: This is the...

Irving: "Sword Cathedral"! The coordinates are correct, but the axes are wrong. It could be connected parallel universe...

Kanon: But how?

Irving: If the axes are wrong, we need to link from this side. Do you know how to do that, Lilka?

Lilka: ... I think so...

Irving: I hear Sielje has a magical artifact for generating a space-time gate.

Lilka: Do you mean the Millennium Puzzle?

Irving: ... So you'll do it?

Lilka: ... But...

Irving: Lilka, we need your magic. Only a Crest Sorceress can control the gate, and we have only you.

Lilka: ... Alright.

Irving: The rescue operation will commence today at 14:00 hours. We are going to rescue Ashley Winchester!

Kanon: What are our chances of success?

Irving: So low I don't want to tell you the number...but not zero.

Lilka: It's that low...

Brad: Even if the chances were 1%, that still wouldn't be zero. What is the distance between zero and the number you are thinking of? Don't worry about it. The important thing is don't give up.

Lilka: Yes. You are correct. Thank you.]

-----

[ARMS goes to the Sword Cathedral.]

Lilka: Millennium Puzzle, open the gate.

~~Millennium Puzzle~~

Lilka: Start the Millennium Puzzle with the Switchblocks. It's about 1500 mpz to Ashley's Salvage Point. If all five Switchblocks respond, you can tune the coordinates. To link to the other world, start the large Switchblock, the big generator. Once you're done tuning, the Puzzle's space will lose its structure and become unstable. That's why there are only a few chances to start the generator. A few minutes? A few seconds. Everything's up to me. I've got to get it together. I must trust my magic powers.

[They shoot all 5 small switchblocks and a larger one appears on the center

of the puzzle.]

Tim: If we can move this, the gate will open.

Lilka: .....

Tim: Lilka?

Brad: There's no time. Start it immediately.

Lilka: Yes.

[Lilka shoots her fire rod at it 2 times but she fails.]

Lilka: It's impossible for me to do this after all.  
It's just like that other time.

Brad: Time... Let's retreat for the time being.

Tim: It's all right. Next time, we'll do better.

Lilka: ..... Hey, thanks. I'm fine. It's easy.

[They leave the Millennium Puzzle.]

Lilka: (It's not that easy.)

[Ashley, Anastasia & Lucied are walking.]

Anastasia: Filgaia should be at the end of the tunnel. But there are no  
road markers en route.

Ashley: Regardless, I must go there. I have to go back home.

[The see a light.]

Ashley: Is that...

Anastasia: The glittering light of the Emphatite? It's a light that cares  
greatly for you.

Ashley: I am going to venture forward relying on that light.  
Let's go together.

Anastasia: No. This is the world where I belong. The other world is a  
place where I no longer can be. So...

Ashley: Really? But I must go.

Anastasia: I don't want to be left alone in a place like this! I never  
wanted to hold the Argetlahm! I was afraid to fight!  
I never wanted to be a holy woman.

Ashley: .....

Anastasia: I didn't want to die. That's right. I didn't want to die!  
But I had no choice! In order to save all I loved, I had to  
fight! I loved talking about just nothing with my friends.  
I was happy just being able to spend time with my mother and  
father. I even had someone I liked.

Anastasia: But, only by giving up everything I was able to save the world. I didn't know how to put it into words, but I knew. I had to die to become a "hero"! I wouldn't have been able to get rid of the Blaze of Disaster. Everyone, everyone wanted it. They wanted me to die.

Ashley: I'm not going back to Filgaia to become a "hero".

Anastasia: Then why are you going? My motives aren't that different from yours.

Ashley: I've got things important there to me, too. To protect what's important, rather than become a "hero" as a "sacrifice". I'll find another way.

Anastasia: I'm sure you'll find another way. Please, find a way. And stop the suffering of the Valeria.

[Ashley goes through the light.]

Anastasia: I'll be okay now, even if I am alone. Thanks for everything, Lucied. Now I need you to lend your strength to him.

[Lucied goes through the light.]

Anastasia: Please stop the suffering of the Valeria Family.

[At the bakery, in Meria Boule, Marina is holding to Emphatite that Ashley gave her.]

Marina: If my feelings are strong and pure enough, they'll reach you. ... If you here me, please answer! Ashley...

[The Emphatite emits a bright light.]

Marina: The light... the warmth... the smell... so soothing. It's like he's right here.

[Ashley appears in the Sword Cathedral, looking at the Stained Glass of the <Sword Magess>.]

Ashley: Start here again. Oh, yeah, you haven't started yet. Then you'll be OK. Everyone's here. I'm gonna do my best because.. you're here to help fight too.

[In the Valeria Chateau's bridge, Kate can be seen sleeping on her position. Amy approaches her.]

Amy: Hey, no sleeping on the job! &[#\$%! Wake up!

[Kate wakes up and looks at her.]

[Inside the Chateau's launch catapult room.]

Chateau Crewman A: Code 618? Not so early in the morning...

[Another Crewman approaches him.]

Chateau Crewman B: Assemble all members immediately! If they're asleep, slap

'em awake!

[Back in the Chateau's control room. Amy, Kate, Irving, and Erwin are gathered together.]

Kate: The Emphatite pulse from his communicator is strengthening.

Amy: We have finished transmitting to all countries! There is a temporary freeze on all use of Emphatite. There will be no interfering signals now.

Kate: Only 0.764 points until Emphatite pulse reaches critical level! If we perceive a signal over that level, we can locate its source, and begin the rescue! Chief!

[Lilka can be seen alone in her room. Scene switches to Tim and Brad's room. Erwin tells them the situation.]

Tim: Is it true? Is it true that Ashley is coming back?

[Kanon is standing outside the Chateau.]

Kanon: You've gone, and come back with something evil.  
It had to be this way. I and no one else will hunt you.

[Tim runs.]

Tim: Quickly! I gave to tell them now!

[Brad and Erwin follow him to Lilka's room, but it seems that Lilka is already gone.]

[Scene shows someone entering the town of Meria heading to the bakery. Lilka can be seen running towards the town too.]

[In Ashley's room, at the bakery...]

Marina: He's late. He said he'd be right back, but he's late without calling again. I'll listen to any excuse. Ashley.

[Ashley enters the room.]

Marina: Even after making all those promises, he's still like this. Where were you until now? What in the world were you doing? Always, always....!

[Marina looks at Ashley.]

Marina: Don't be silent. Say something! Yes, but it's different. That's not what I wanted to ask you. What I really want to know is...

Ashley: Right now...

Marina: Yes, welcome home.

[Lilka is sitting on the stairs, just outside the room. Tim comes.]

Tim: Oh, here you are! Hey, listen! Ashley is...



Lilka: I already know.

Tim: We came here to tell Marina. .... Were you crying?  
Why are you looking like that?

Lilka: .....

Tim: Ashley is coming home? Aren't you happy?

Lilka: Of course I'm happy. How could I not be happy?! I'm happy,  
happy. I'm very happy, and... just a little bit lonely.

[Inside the room, Ashley and Marina embraces each other.]

-----

#####  
#[2.03] Sacrificial Altar & the Grotto of Lourdes #  
#####

[In the Valeria Chateau's Strategic Planning room...]

Irving: It looks like everyone's here. Thanks to each and every one of  
you ARMS members, we are all safely together again. You truly  
have done well. With the destruction of Odessa and the rescue of  
Ashley, our strategy against Odessa is over. This, I have a new  
mission for ARMS to complete.

Ashley: Oh yes, Irving... What happened with Filgaia when I was gone?  
What is the significance of this?

Irving: The situation is actually just as bad as while you were lost...  
I think it has been happening slowly for a long time now without  
us realizing it.

Ashley: "For a long time...?"

Irving: Yes, I think so. While we were concentrating solely on Odessa,  
Filgaia has been slowly eaten away. The symptoms were first seen  
in changes of life-forms. First, normal plants and animals  
started decreasing, then monsters began to take over. This has  
never happened until now. At first, we thought the decrease in  
normal plants and animals came with the increase in monsters.  
But we don't know where the monster plants are coming from.  
That's a big question.

Ashley: We blindly assumed it was the work of Odessa. But... As Vinsfeld  
said, the increase of monsters does not seem to be the work of  
Odessa. I doubt he would have lied under those conditions.  
Which means...

Irving: ...that a terrible disaster is descending on Filgaia.  
It began with a sighting from the Astronomical Observatory in  
Sielje...

Irving: Filgaia's deterioration wasn't limited to just the ecosystem.  
Early on, once a small "Stain" fell to the sky and instantly,  
eroded the earth. The ocean lost its glimmer and land its  
vitality, and eventually... the sky was swallowed. It's the

phenomenon of Filgaia no longer being "Filgaia". We call this the "Stain Paradigm". The principles of what makes Filgaia "Filgaia" have been altered. At this rate, everything'll be stained, and eventually even we too will be devoured. The next mission is to investigate and stop Filgaia's Stain Paradigm.

Irving: The situation seems stable for now, but who knows what's next?

Tim: For the sky to have been devoured... This follows what the chief of Baskar Village told us of his dream. Maybe it meant this.

Irving: Yes, I think you're right. Maybe a Guardian would have sensed something of this scale, concerning all of Filgaia. Alright, then, let's go to Baskar Village, Maybe we'll find a clue.

[ARMS leaves the room, Ashley stops along the way.]

Ashley: Irving... I heard from Anastasia in the "Between World" that you are a descendant of the <Sword Magess>.

Irving: I didn't mean to hide it. I just never had the time to bring it up.

Ashley: ..... One more thing. The "other self" inside of me is Lord Blazer, the Demon called the "Blaze of Disaster".

Irving: A descendant of the Magess and the embodiment of the... "Blaze of Disaster". In other words, we are enemies.

Ashley: You are honest about it, at least. You are probably right. Maybe I should get out of ARMS? I don't want to end up hurting anybody with this power.

Irving: Right now we need all the firepower we can muster. And even Lord Blazer's power can help Filgaia. I expect you to use it so. Also...

Ashley: Also what?

[Kanon re-enters the room.]

Kanon: You took me on for just such an emergency, right? You may be possessed by the "Blaze of Disaster" but I am a descendant of the <Sword Magess>. I will not be shy about exorcising that demon if I must.

Irving: Don't forget it.

[Tim, Lilka, and Brad re-enter the room.]

Lilka: We're here to help. Don't try to do everything yourself.

Brad: Depending on your friends is a good idea in battle, you know.

Tim: We may not be that strong, but as one we can do anything!

Irving: Let us fight together, Ashley.

Ashley: Everyone...

Irving:            You don't need to worry about Lord Blazer lurking within.  
                  I too will look into myself. I hear the ruins called the Grotto  
                  of Lourdes which holds records of wars. Maybe we should visit.  
                  Good. You will meet the people pf Baskar and also gather  
                  information at Lourdes. I leave the order of operations up to  
                  you, but we need that information!

<Call Menu>

Irving:            >I heard the Grotto of Lourdes is near Sielje.  
                  But I'm not so sure about it.

-----

                    
/Sacrificial Altar/

????????????????????

[ARMS heads to Baskar Village to learn more about the Stain Paradigm.  
They head to the Village Chief's house.]

Village Chief:    ...The sky is truly being gnawed away... The dream-seer's  
                  vision has finally come to pass. I will explain from the  
                  beginning. The dream-seers have the knowledge and the training  
                  to receive and recognize the Guardians' will. But messages from  
                  the Guardians come only in fragments, and are often difficult to  
                  interpret. It is extremely rare for a message so concrete to be  
                  bestowed by the Guardians. The danger of Filgaia must be truly  
                  great to warrant such a vision.

Ashley:            ...Well, what are the Guardians trying to tell us?

Village Chief:    Unfortunately, that is all we know... Or will ever know from  
                  the Guardians, for the dream-seer can only wait for dreams. And  
                  since the power of the Guardians is also the power of Filgaia...  
                  Filgaia being eaten away means the power of the Guardians will be  
                  diminished.

Tim:               Um...excuse me... Could I help out maybe? Could I receive the  
                  will of the Guardians with the power that I have...?

Village Chief:    It is indeed possible... for Tim to channel the will of the  
                  Guardians.

Tim:               I'll do anything I can!

Village Chief:    ..... We would need to go to the sealed sanctuary of  
                  the Guardians. The Sealed Sanctuary would have enough of the  
                  Guardians' power left in it.

Ashley:            The Sealed Sanctuary of the Guardians...What is it?

Village Chief:    It is called... "the Sacrificial Altar".

Lilka:             W-wait a second! You keep bringing up sacrifices! Hold on...:-(

Tim:               ..... I'm going.

Lilka:             I can't believe it! Now Tim is talking that way, too!

Tim:               Don't worry. I don't want to go there to be sacrificed, either.  
                  All I want to do there is ask the Guardians what is happening to

Filgaia.

Lilka: It makes me worried, for some reason...

Tim: I was scared at first... At first I wanted not to be a "Pillar" so much I couldn't think of anything else. It's different now, though... It's hard to say why, but now I have a reason for dying. Now there is a reason for me to fight. I don't want to run away anymore. I want to help.

Pooka: I think he means he's started to find himself...  
But there's something I don't get...

Tim: You see...

Pooka: I am me...but there is no "myself" to me. So if there were a Medium, an information matrix, then I could change into anything. I am only me, Pooka, because there is no "myself". Tim has begun to find himself since he met me. I'm envious of that...

Tim: I would like to find "myself", too... but maybe with everyone's help I'll be able to...

Pooka: ..... I have to try...!

Village Chief: I found out about the Sealed Sanctuary, the "Sacrificial Altar". There are many things said about its precise location, though. You had better ask people yourselves.

Ashley: We will be with you the whole way, Tim. We will protect you.

Tim: Thanks, but I'm not scared any more. Let's go!

T@Village Chief: It was fated that one day you would stand before the Sacrificial Altar. If this is your fate, though... who knows, sometimes it is possible to cheat even fate...

@Village Chief: The Sacrificial Altar is where the Guardians receive the "Pillar". There, Tim will free the power of the Guardians and cause the advent of the avatar "Gaia". This is the cruel fate to which Tim was born...

@Colette: (I don't believe it...it can't be the Sacrificial Altar in the Urartu Mountains...can't get there from here...isn't there another way...I don't want to... I don't know...help me...)  
.....

T@Colette: (Is it true true true? Did I really say I'd go to the Sacrificial Altar even though I really think we can save Filgaia without a "Pillar"? What should I do...what should I do... I don't believe...)  
.....

@Woman outside the N house: The Sacrificial Altar was built in the steep mountains of Urartu, far away from the eyes of the world. There, those who control the hearts of men, the Guardian Lords, the avatars of the Guardian Lord, wait for the arrival of the "Pillar" ...

[After gathering information at the village, they leave.]

-----  
~~Sacrificial Altar~~

[The party moves on until they reach the end of the dungeon.]

Lilka:           There's light emanating from the Medium.

Tim:             The will of the Guardians is tied together and is growing larger.  
                  It appears to be one giant lifeform.

Kanon:           What in the world is it?

[The light from the Medium moves onto the platform in front of them.]

A Mass of Light: We are Gaia, the body of collective consciousness for all  
                  Guardians. While we are a crowd, we are also individuals.  
                  We're the one and only Gaia. We are the life of stars.

Pooka:           I have brought the "Pillar" boy.

Tim:             Pooka!

Gaia:            Pooka, our dispatched "guide", you have served well.

Pooka:           Pooka has been guiding Tim according to Gaia's will. I was told  
                  nothing of the Sacred Precincts, but that destiny would rule once  
                  Pooka and Tim met.

Tim:             Destiny?

Gaia:            That's right, Tim, boy of the "Pillar". Everything is a part of  
                  destiny spinning on a wheel. It's a planned accord. Accept your  
                  fate, as the "Pillar". Filgaia is now being confronted by an  
                  unprecedented crisis. The only ones who can stop it are us,  
                  Gaia, and... one who can deliver our power. The boy of the  
                  "Pillar". You, Tim.

Tim:             Please wait! What in the world is going on in Filgaia now with  
                  the sky being devoured...?

Gaia:            ..... It's not fair for you to become a human Pillar  
                  without knowing. All right, I shall tell you. The invading  
                  presence in the world is none other than "The Other World".

Brad:            The other world?

Gaia:            Right. "The other world" is consuming Filgaia. Just like us,  
                  the world is a collection of small lives that is one big  
                  "spirit". That world has verstepped its boundaries and is  
                  devouring other worlds.

Kanon:           This is so inconceivable. It's ridiculous...

Gaia:            At first, the invasive eating took the shape of small beings.  
                  They were monsters and were the first arrival of beings to oppose  
                  Filgaia's Paradigm. But the fray in the world's boundaries grew  
                  and soon a larger vessel was needed. A larger vessel to obtain  
                  another spirit... In other words, Filgaia itself.

Ashley: Isn't there something we can do?

Gaia: Unfortunately there's nothing. Your physical power can't really harm this conceptual "world". Think about it. Even if we use weapons, there is no effect. That's what it means to have a conceptual "world" as an opponent.

Brad: No response. It's like having a cancer cell as an opponent.

Gaia: The boy of the "Pillar", do you understand now? To fight "the other world", we, as similar conceptual beings, must be released. When you have something of value, the path you must choose will become naturally clear. When life is held out before us, we can protect anything.

Tim: ..... I don't want to.

Gaia: Hey, "Pillar". Why do you hesitate? For the "Pillar" to be given as an offering to Filgaia...

Tim: Even if it is my "destiny", I can't accept it. I'm not afraid of dying! I just don't want to give my life to something I doubt. Even if I protect Filagaia as the "Pillar" now, the doubts in my heart won't be resolved! To die as a sacrificial offering is an easy choice.

Gaia: To give your life to protect what's important to you... How can you object to that? Boy of the "Pillar".

Tim: It's because I...

Pooka: I, Pooka, beg you! Pooka will search for answers to the "Pillar's" doubts.

Gaia: "Guide" Pooka, is this your will?

Pooka: ..... That's it.

Gaia: ..... Then, all right. "Pillar", the choice is yours. But be sure to make your decision before it's too late.

Gaia: Pooka!

Pooka: What is it?

Gaia: You don't have a "self". You're the transforming Sub-Spirit Pooka. You have not forgotten, have you?

Pooka: I have not forgotten.

[The light approaches Tim.]

[Tim acquires the Force: Divide.]

[TUTORIAL]: \*Power Divider is a Tim force skill. With the Guardian's powers, all enemies' powers will be cut in half.

[The party stops by Sielje Region for information about the Grotto of Lourdes.]

@ McGregor: The Grotto of Lourdes? Yes, I believe it can be found on a cape southeast of here. But to get in, you have to pass a retinal pattern check. But that, too presents a challenge to me, for being a scientist, I... [Remainder omitted]

[They leave Sielje and finds the grotto.]

~~Grotto of Lourdes~~

[In the entrance, a door gets a retinal scan of those who want to enter. Kanon, a descendant of <Sword Magess> examines the door.]

Door: >..... Retinal Pattern Match Found WELCOME, YOU WITH MAGESS BLOOD. THIS IS WHERE YOUR SLEEPING MEMORY WILL WAKE.

[The door opens. They move on until they reach a pedestal. Kanon stands on it. It takes her to a space somewhere.]

Kanon: Th...This is...

[A little girl holding something on her right hand passes by.]

Kanon: H...Hey you... Where are you going?

Girl from Memory: Mother has to work now, so go somewhere else to play, she said.

Kanon: There's nothing up ahead. Turn around now.

Girl from Memory: When I got home, my mother was there with some man I didn't know. At my house... Hm.... There's no place for me.

Kanon: That's impossible... You are...

Girl from Memory: Aisha.

[Kanon wakes up back in the Grotto.]

Ashley: Kanon! What is this?

Kanon: I'm sorry. It'll work next time. It'll be fine.

[The party moves on and finds another pedestal. It shows her a scene with a woman carrying a baby.]

Kanon: Mother...

Kanon's Mother: Aisha, you must listen now... Regardless of the kind of life you're living, we have the blood of the <Sword Magess>. No matter how difficult life gets, forget not blood of <Sword Magess>. Descended from the <Sword Magess> and related to the Valerias, the Bernadettes are having hard times. If I can provide proof of the blood in me, I can live the life of nobility.

[The mother disappears.]

Kanon: I don't want to know the memory of the "self" I threw away.  
If I have the blood of the <Sword Magess> in me, then awaken that  
"memory".

[Kanon is back at the Grotto. She looks tired.]

Ashley: Kanon?

Kanon: Don't worry. I will awaken memories regarding Lord Blazer.  
Be careful you don't get killed by me then.

[ARMS moves on. Kanon steps on another pedestal which shows Aisha, crying.]

Aisha: Wah. Wah. Wah. They were killed. They were killed, right? And  
I survived. If I exorcise the monsters, I can become a "hero".  
I can become a "hero", fitting to the blood of the <Sword Magess>  
flowing in me. I can't see out of my right eye. Parts of my  
body won't move. But...I can manage with an artificial arm and  
leg. I got it. I'll get reborn into a body that knows no pain.  
My body and my name... I will throw away my old self.

Kanon: That's right. This is me. I won't deny it. It's a fact. But!  
The <Sword Magess> blood in my body is a fact too.

[Kanon flashes her blade.]

Kanon: Reawaken! Memories of the <Sword Magess>.

[Kanon is back at the Grotto, showing her blade.]

Lilka: It's OK.

Kanon: Wah. Wah. Wah. No problem. It's been awakened in me, the memory  
of the <Sword Magess>.

[NARRATION]: Kanon has awakened from her blood the memories of the  
<Sword Magess> which... were of the Guardian Blade, the  
"Argetlahm" in the hands of the goddess. From the "Future"  
rulers, the Guardian's body was born the sword, the Argetlahm.  
The sword is a type of spirit response weapon that changes the  
user's will to battle strength. The oppressive power consumes  
the user's spirit so one with a strong spirit is chosen.  
Anastasia plied the Guardian Blade, Argetlahm, with the strongest  
of human wills, "desire".

Kanon: Wah. Wah. Wah.

Tim: Are you really all right?

Kanon: One's capacity for memory simply was overloaded with information.  
Hey, thanks. Sorry to have worried you.

[The party moves forward. They find another pedestal. Kanon steps on it.]

[NARRATION]: Kanon has awakened from her blood the memories of the  
<Sword Magess> which was about the far distant past when Filgaia  
was burned by the Blaze of Disaster, "Lord Blazer". The Demon,  
Lord Blazer who plies the scorching hell fire by thought, takes  
in all the wrath, sorrow and negative feelings of people and



grows fat as a curse called "God". Each time the hell fire is waved, 100 wraths, and 1000 sorrows are born surpassing a new threshold.

[NARRATION]: Those possessing the flesh and blood, consume flesh and blood to become into being. Those who consume emotions, in other words, "hearts", take shape that way. They destroy beings of similar substance. Physical forms taken by spirits and forms of similar substance also need to be cut by the "Spirit's Blade". The "Argetlahm" could destroy Lord Blazer because both were beings of similar substance.

Kanon: Ashley! Concealed in you and controlled by you is Lord Blazer. By living with Lord Blazer you were able to take on the Argetlahm which was all dependent on your spirit, in other words, "heart".

Ashley: My "heart"... I can't feel it. It's not at all clear. It's only a vague sensation.

Kanon: Yes. but the equilibrium could collapse anytime and lapse into an uncontrollable situation. The power to save the world and the power to destroy the world... Either way, you're on a tightrope between two overwhelming powers. Don't ever forget this.

[They move on and Kanon steps on the last pedestal.]

Kanon: I wonder if it's a veto from the Bernadette side. The suspicions have finally been cleared. I'm now confident that the blood of the <Sword Magess> flows within me. Please, a little more... I'd rid of this body, if I could die a "hero".

[NARRATION]: Kanon has awakened from her blood the memories of the <Sword Magess> which are the Blaze of Disaster, Lord Blazer, who will burn the world. The reason Anastasia couldn't completely destroy Lord Blazer, ironically, is due to the "humans" from the world one was to protect. Negative feelings will end the world of humans. No matter how much Anastasia brandished the power of her spirit, with only one person's "heart", in the face of Lord Blazer's rebirth, it was a wasted effort. As a last resort, Anastasia, in exchange for her life, trapped Lord Blazer behind the event horizon to protect Filgaia. But, as long as negative feelings continue, the chains that bind could be released and Lord Blazer could revive, leading to a future of uncertainty.

[Kanon is back the Grotto.]

Kanon: The one who can say it with certainty is Ashley. Lord Blazer hidden in you is attempting a revival by trying to break the chains that bind. Fleeing from the event horizon and hiding in your body was his first step toward resurrection.

Ashley: Lord Blazer is in my body?

Kanon: You have any symptoms?

Ashley: That instant we were caught in the Heimdal Gazzo explosion... Something snapped violently inside me... If that's it...

Kanon: .....

[Kanon acquires the Force: "Gat Lv. 3".]

[TUTORIAL]: \*This force ability allows a variety of Level 3 attacks against a single enemy.

=====

```
#####  
#[2.04] Rescue Marina from the Frozen Lake of Hell #  
#####
```

[After their mission, the communicator beeps.]

-Kanon: It's from the Chateau? Looks like something happened.

-Tim: It's so sudden. I wonder what it is? I'm worried.

-Lilka: What could it be? I've got a bad feeling about this.

-Brad: Did something happen?

-Ashley: It's from the Valeria Chateau. I wonder what it is?

Irving: >It's me.

Ashley: Roger, Ashley here.

Irving: >We have an emergency here. Here's the short version...

Ashley: Talk to me.

Irving: >Marina has been abducted.

Ashley: Marina? Abducted? How?

Irving: I'll tell you the rest later. Return to the Valeria Chateau!

Ashley: Hmph. Alright!

[The party goes to the Chateau's Strategic Planning Room...]

[LETTER]: <<Ashley Winchester, I have something that you love. Meet me at the ruins of the... "Lost Garden" on the lone island in the inland sea.>>  
--Frozen Lake of Hell, First Round.

Irving: This is the ransom note.

Lilka: "Frozen Lake of Hell, First Round"? Who is that?

Irving: Maybe it refers to Cocytus, Caina...

Kanon: So she's alive. But how...?

Ashley: That doesn't matter! I have to save Marina as quickly as I can!

Irving: Calm down, Ashley. You are like a bomb ready to explode. And your emotions are the trigger. So calm down!

Ashley: I can't believe it! Marina...

Brad: We know it's a trap but we still have to go.

Irving: I understand. Saving Marina is our top priority. You all must go to the Lost Garden with all haste! Ashley, you must control your inner self. I will find out as much as I can about Lord Blazer from here.

Ashley: I'm sorry, Irving.

@Irving: The ransom letter says the Lost Garden is on an inland sea island. This is the first time ARMS has tried to rescue hostages, but you must not fail!

<Call Menu>

Irving: The Lost Garden is an ancient structure located on an island in the Inland Sea. Remember not to get emotional.

-----

~~Lost Garden~~

Ashley: Marina's here! I have to save her. I don't know what I'll do if anything happens to Marina.

Brad: Control yourself! Panic will only jeopardize the mission, especially with you.

Kanon: Unsettled emotions can't help but eventually explode.

Ashley: Ugh.

Lilka: Hey, don't always keep all that in by yourself.

Tim: Let's hurry, but keep your cool.  
We want to save Marina as much as you.

Ashley: Sorry, you guys. I do need your help.  
I need you to help me save Marina.

[The party goes deeper in the dungeon. On their way, they find some glyphs.]

[TUTORIAL]: \*This is within the control circle of Caina's Randolph the Magic Key who is keeping the door closed. To control Randolph's magic powers it's necessary to leave someone here to conduct Mental Jamming.

[It comes to a point that Ashley is the only one left to continue in the dungeon. He finds a stone tablet.]

[A written challenge for Ashley is carved into the stone tablet.]

[STONE TABLET]: To Ashley Winschester, the one who stole Sir Vinsfeld, the object of my affection and protector... I have long awaited for the opportunity to have an audience with you in the Land of Promise. Hurry to me, for I will bury your everything. Your tombstone will read "Your Everything". Soon, you will know as I have, how it feels to have lost everything.

[Ashley continues on.]

Ashley:           Where are you, Caina? I'm here! I'm right here!  
                  How about returning Marina?

Voice of Caina:   So you think you're the only one who lost something important.  
                  I really hate that. That bugs me so much!

[Caina appears with Marina.]

Marina:           Ashley!

Ashley:           Marina! Hang on! I'm going to save you!

Caina:            To think that our troubles and the girls are treated the same.

[Caina pushes Marina to the ground between her and Ashley.]

Caina:            To me, no. To Filgaia, Sir Vinsfeld was a very important figure.  
                  I can't imagine discussing a future that doesn't include him.  
                  But it was You!!!

Ashley:           Yes, I destroyed Vinsfeld! If you want your revenge, I'll fight  
                  you!

Caina:            Revenge? You've got it wrong. What I want isn't anything like  
                  that.

Ashley:           What?

Caina:            What I want is for you to experience the same thing I did.  
                  Do you understand?

Ashley:           .....

[Caina emits a golden light.]

Caina:            In other words... I want you to experience losing something  
                  important just as I did.

Ashley:           Marina.

[Ashley jumps in to protect Marina.]

[Meanwhile, in Irving's study, Valeria Chateau...]

Irving:           It is true that a powerful being exists within a human body.  
                  That being... Lord Blazer is controlled by the desire to protect  
                  that which he loves. But... This same desire to protect that  
                  which he loves also invokes his enormous power! Extreme desire  
                  may pry off the lid and release its fury, which cannot be  
                  controlled. ARMS itself might set this force of uncontrollable  
                  violence loose upon the world...  
                  ... this Over KnightB...

[Back at the Lost Garden, Ashley enters battle as a Golden Knight.]

Ashley:           Nooo.... Caina!!

Caina: An incandescent flash is a 2-step shift from a thermal overload.  
That's right, Ashley. It's the power of that creature.

Ashley: Uh...This...is...the power that saves what's important.

Caina: Wrong, Ashley Winschester. That is the ominous power which  
steals important things.

[Caina summons Randolph and the battle begins.  
After a while, Ashley wins over Caina.]

Caina: Now you can experience the pain of losing something important.  
My wish has finally come true. Ha. Ha. Ha! Hee. Hee. I took  
from you what's important to you. I took it away with my own  
hands. I took it from you! I took it from you! Yet, this  
hollow sensation inside...What could it be? Please, tell me, Sir  
Vinsfeld.

[Caina disappears. Ashley returns back to normal.]

Ashley: Good. Marina, are you all right?

[Marina turns away from Ashley.]

Ashley: Marina?

[Tim, Kanon, Brad, and Lilka enter the room.]

Marina: Don't come any closer!

Ashley: What's wrong?

[Marina looks back at Ashley.]

Marina: Who are you? Who?

Ashley: Marina, I'm...

Marina: I don't know you! Don't assume Ashley's shape. Don't speak with  
the same voice. Don't speak so tenderly. Please!  
Return Ashley to me.

[Marina cries.]

-----  
[Ashley brings Marina to the medical facility in the chateau.

Ashley is on his knees, as if begging to Marina.]

Ashley: I'm sorry, Marina... Marina... I wish I'd spoken to you sooner,  
when I had the chance. But I couldn't say it because I was  
scared... I'm sorry, Marina...

Irving: Please see what you can do for Marina.

Ashley: ...Marina!

[Marina looks at Ashley.]

Ashley: I can't reach her anymore, can I?  
I guess... you won't forgive me after all.

[Marina looks away.]

Ashley: Marina, I-I.....

[Some time later, Marina is left in the room, lying in bed.]

Marina: ... No! Ashley wasn't wrong! It is I who was wrong.  
It is I who can't be forgiven. When Ashley needed support most,  
I couldn't say anything to him. I am sorry. It's like I can't  
do anything right. Why am I so weak?

=====

#####  
#[2.05] The Nuclear Dragon Grauswein #  
#####

[In the observatory in Sielje Region...]

Man A: Did you measure correctly?

Man B: I wouldn't intentionally measure incorrectly, would I?

Man A: Yeah? Well there's no room for error this time, so measure it  
again!

Man B: I did it already. No matter how many times I measure it, I get  
the same results. It's a huge thermonuclear mass near Sector 326  
in Cradle Constellation and it's heading for Filagaia! We  
matched it against the patterns Guild Galad gave us, and it looks  
like the nuclear weapon Grauswein.

Man A: Good lord...

-----

[Irving, the King of Meria Boule, the Queen of Sylvaland, and the Guild  
Galad Master are gathered in Guild Galad's planning room.]

Irving: According to the observatory in Sielje Region the Nuclear Dragon  
"Grauswein" is now heading toward Filagaia at a top speed of 480.  
The heat given off by Grauswein has a radar-jamming effect,  
preventing precise trajectory determination. It will take a  
little longer to extrapolate the point of impact.

King of Meria Boule: A fine parting gift Odessa has left us.

Queen of Sylvaland: One peril aims to devour Filagaia as another threatens to  
blow it up. Both are beyond my powers of understanding.  
I am at a loss.

Guild Galad Master: Someone must draw Grauswein away from Filagaia. Or...

King of Meria Boule: What on earth are you getting at, Double "G"?

Guild Galad Master: The Nuclear Dragon won't blow up as soon as he lands.  
The ancient records say that Grauswein is simply an empty reactor

when first summoned. He must accumulate energy before initiating a nuclear reaction.

Queen of Sylvaland: That's very interesting, but what good does that information do us?

Irving: That's it, Guild Galad Master! That's the key!

Guild Galad Master: You are indeed astute, Sir Irving. Grauswein will first seek out sources of energy to absorb. That means he could be lured with a high-energy reaction. In other words...

King of Meria Boule: We can get him to land where WE want him to.

Irving: But where can we get an energy generator we can control?

Guild Galad Master: Where do you think we are now?

Guild Galad Master: The entire city of Guild Galad is a collection of small factories. If linked, they would form a huge complex with an energy output equivalent to Alchemic Plant!

King of Meria Boule: You will use your own country as bait, Double "G"?

Guild Galad Master: I do not intend to let Grauswein destroy Guild Galad at will. Well, will you and ARMS stop the Nuclear Dragon?

Irving: Of course we will. Guild Galad Master, I am truly grateful to you.

Queen of Sylvaland: Well, listen to this! Such humility! How unusual for you.

Guild Galad Master: Yes, well, I am to blame for this mess. Besides, as a proud Filgaian, I'll be damned if I go out without a fight.

Irving: We will begin preparations to intercept Grauswein.

Guild Galad Master: Very good! We will start linking the city's factories to create our makeshift generator!

[Guild Galad soldiers get to work. Noel is helping, too.]

-----  
[In Valeria Chateau's bridge...]

Irving: Our plan against Grauswein is beautifully simple. We will lure it with Guild Galad's high energy, and attack before it's nuclear reaction! That's it! Luckily, Grauswein's rate of descent is relatively slow. We will move Valeria Chateau to ground zero in Guild Galad when your preparations are complete. We only have one chance to succeed, and failure is not an option! Ashley, you will not join us. I forbid you take part in the battle with Grauswein. You understand why, don't you?

Ashley: You mean... the fury?

Irving: That's right. Grauswein is a monster Dragon of tremendous power. If you were to confront it, Lord Blazer might awake within you as a response to its power.

Ashley: ..... I understand.

Irving: Sorry. I would like to act as support until the battle, though.

@Irving: We will move the Chateau to ground zero in Guild Galad... when preparations are complete. We only have one chance to succeed, and failure is not an option!

@Kate: I remember something the chief once said. He said that the fight with Odessa was just a warmup... that ARMS was formed to combat a much larger, global threat. I wonder if the Chief knew about this peril. Did he know the sky would change like this?

@Amy: Even though we defeated Odessa, things haven't gotten any better. The sky is still crazy... Oh, what's going to become of Filgaia?

Erwin: What do you want to do?

[ARMS]: Turn to Grauswein's drop point.

Irving: Now we will rid the world of Grauswein. All members except Ashley are to meet on the deck when we arrive at the engagement point. Ashley is restricted from action indefinitely. Wait in the Chateau's personnel room until further orders. Please understand...

[Marina, in a guest room...]

Marina: What in the world should I do? I can't even express my feelings the way I want to. Ashley.

---

[BOSS - Nuclear Dragon - Grauswein]

[Grauswein lands at the Chateau's deck.]

Brad: This is the "Nuclear Dragon", Grauswein. We must stop it before it starts a thermonuclear reaction. We have only one chance to succeed. If we fail, Filgaia will disappear in a flash!

[Meanwhile, Ashley is inside the Chateau's personnel room. He felt a shaking.]

Ashley: Has the battle begun? I'm depending on all of you. Stop Grauswein. Save Filgaia. Please.

[The place shakes more.]

Ashley: ..... I can't even protect what I love. What am I doing here?

[The four ARMS members enter battle against Grauswein. After a while...]

Irving: >Nuclear reaction is accelerating in Grauswein! Maybe it was impossible from the very beginning for humans to stop Grauswein ...

Irving: >..... If it comes to it, ram the Chateau into the beast!



It's already too late to save Filgaia...

[At the Chateau's bridge...]

Kate: Chief!

Irving: Report!

Kate: Ashley is no longer in his ordered location.

Irving: What!? He can't be...

[Back in the battlefield...]

Brad: Shoot! We seem to be having no effect at all... We must stop it before the thermonuclear reaction reaches its threshold! More! We need more strength or we are doomed! Ashley...

[Ashley rushes to Grauswein in KnightBlazer form.]

Ashley: Don't do it, Irving! It's wrong to sacrifice too much for an ideal. I know you think so too, Irving! That day, you told me you wanted to fight alongside us. Listen to me now! Right now is the only way for us to fight together!

[Ashley fights Grauswein until the nuclear dragon explodes.]

Inner Voice: What a nice feeling. The battle-lust sets me free. The moment your heart becomes tainted with mine is the moment all of Filgaia becomes the blood-red stain of Disaster! Ha ha ha ha. I should thank you, Ashley Winchester. For you and your fellow humans being kind enough to free me again.

Lilka: Ashley? No, it can't be... Ashley's face is all twisted... His kindness has disappeared...

[The Demon roars.]

Brad: Can you stop it from getting out?

Kanon: Lord Blazer has awakened... Ashley's heart is no longer a cage that can hold him. It is Lord Blazer, god of Disaster.

Tim: Ashley! You can hear us, can't you? Do our voices reach you at all?

Ashley: Nooooo!! I...am...h-holding... him...b-back. Must... d-do it...now! Q-Quickly! You must...strike me d-down b-before...L-Lord Blazer... is ...r-released!

Lilka: We can't! We could never... How can you say that!?

Ashley: Kanon, it is you who must do it! You must fulfill your destiny, and your...p-promise...to me. Now is the time.

Kanon: It has finally come to this.

Kanon: .....

Kanon: Fool! My hand betrays me. No, it is my heart. I guess I'm no

true "Hero" after all. Why can't I act? Why can't I strike the killing blow, as I know I must?

Tim: Ashley is our friend! That's why you can't strike him down. Is it really the duty of a "Hero" to slay a comrade who you care for? You should know that, Kanon. That's why...

[Marina approaches them.]

Brad: It's too dangerous! He may look like Ashley, but he may no longer be. Just like this sky, his heart is being gnawed away by the god! That's why...

Marina: That's why I'm here. I decided that I want to protect the place for you to come back home to. You who are always so worn out from fighting, you look like you're about to collapse. I want to say "Welcome home" to the person I love.

[Marina goes near Ashley.]

Ashley: Don't get near me, Marina! Stay away!

Marina: Listen to me, Ashley. I decided something. Whatever happens, I want to be by your side. I want to hold your hand and never let go.

Ashley: My body is being gnawed away from the inside! I can't control it! You have to get away from me before I lose myself. If you don't...

Marina: If I don't...what?

Ashley: ..... I can feel the thoughts of Lord Blazer inside me, and I know what he's capable of. He will use his power of destruction to tear Filgaia apart. If you don't bury me now, while I'm holding him back, all will turn to ash. You must understand, Marina. Filgaia is being threatened by a power it can't withstand. If he awakes, none will be able to resist him, and all humanity will perish. I will nip the flower of humanity in the bud. Soon, he will replace me in this body. I wanted to talk to you one last time as Ashley Winchester.

Marina: Ashley!

[The Demon roars.]

Ashley: Run, run away! Quickly...

[Ashley grabs Marina by the throat.]

Lilka: Don't do it, Ashley!! If you do that you will truly become evil. Please...stop...

Marina: Hard...to...b-breathe... I...understand...now... You...must be...fighting...so hard...against...the evil...that wants to destroy...Filgaia. While...you were fighting...for us you were...also...fighting...yourself...

Ashley: P-please...

Marina: D-don't worry. I... know the t-truth. Even without Emphatite, I can sense the thoughts and kindness of Ashley. Thank you.

Ashley: Thhhhhan ... kkk yuuuu.

Marina: Even if you become evil, if you still have your kindness...  
...you will be Ashley to me. No matter what. Don't worry.  
No matter how far apart we get, I will still know where you are,  
Ashley. So you, too, Ashley. Never forget where there is a  
place for you to go home.

Ashley: Ughh ... waaaah, errr vaaaaa, aaah, ooooo. Ohhhh...Ohhhh.....!

[Ashley releases Marina. He turns back to normal.  
Marina embraces him as he faints.]

Marina: I won't go anywhere. No matter what you do, I believe in you,  
and will be waiting for you to come back. I will be keeping your  
home, our home, safe. You can come straight back to me from  
wherever you are, whenever you want. "Welcome home".  
I will become strong enough to be able to say that whenever you  
need me to, Ashley.

Lilka: (Looks like they made up.)

-----  
Irving: Today, at 1:00 p.m., Grauswein, the Nuclear Dragon, was  
destroyed. The mission was a success.

King of Meria Boule: We are at last free of the specter of Odessa.

Queen of Sylvaland: What would we have done without the help of Guild Galad  
Master?

Guild Galad Master: I was only doing what anyone who loves this planet would  
do.

King of Meria Boule: It's ironic, isn't it? Without Odessa, the international  
teamwork that stopped the nuclear threat would never have been.

Queen of Sylvaland: Are you saying we benefited from Odessa?! But then  
again... Perhaps, in a sense, you are right. It IS ironic, isn't  
it?

Irving: ...

King of Meria Boule: Ah, but that monster Dragon was indeed a dreadful  
creature. If a group of them attacked en masse, we would have been  
done for... even with ARMS to help us.

Guild Galad Master: Most of the real "Dragons" died and became fossils in  
ancient times. The organo-mechanical "Dragons" built in Guild  
Galad are made from those fossilized Dragons.

Queen of Sylvaland: That is how you knew they would be effective against  
Grauswein.

Irving: Guild Galad Master, are all the Dragons dead now?

Guild Galad Master: Eh?

Irving: If Grauswein was sealed up as a summonable nuclear weapon... there may be other Dragons elsewhere that we could use to protect ourselves.

Guild Galad Master: ...Hmm... Now, this is just a rumor, and, to be honest, I know not if there is any truth to it, but... in Guild Galad, even today the people speak of the legend of the Last Dragon. He is called Lombardia, the Dragon Caliber, legendary winged creature said to once rule the skies.

-----  
#####  
#[2.06] Lombardia - The Legendary Wing of Heaven #  
#####

Irving: Now that you all have faced the monster Dragon, forged... of both flesh and machine, you know all too well its destructive capabilities.

Brad: The power of the dragon against that which gnaws await at Filgaia... We must use the power of dragons, for it's stronger than that which humans hold.

Irving: Guild Galad tells the legend of the last dragon. If, as the legend relates, we can make use of the power of that dragon...

Ashley: If we can possess a power equal to that of Grauswein's...  
.....

Ashley: But, will we be able to control such a great power? And will we no be corrupted by a power that mighty? Could we ourselves become evil? I understand these things, for I contain Lord Blazer within me. Even if you think your heart controls the power, in the heat of battle it's power that rules the heart. That was the fate of both Slayheim and Odessa. That was their path to destruction. Am I wrong, Irving?

Irving: I know what you're trying to say. And I know that Lord Blazer swells within you with the heat of each battle. That's why we need to use the power of the dragon! This is the power we need to stop the threat to Filgaia!

Ashley: Our struggles against Odessa were just preparation for this. But are we truly stronger? Are we just stronger in battle, or have our hearts grown too? I don't know... I just don't know.

Irving: I do know that we don't have time to sit down and wait for the answer. We must act now, and learn the answer to that question when the time is right. Right now we must concentrate on protecting the world so that those who come later may judge.

Ashley: You are right. Right now we must think of protecting Filgaia above all.

Irving: To return to the question... Our information says the dragon lives off the energy of magma. In which case, our best chance is the "Sleeping Volcano"! the legendary dragon lies in the Sleeping

Volcano, which the Raline Observatory studied. The dormant volcano's magma is perfect for giving the dragon energy to sustain itself. Now for your next mission: find the dragon in the Sleeping Volcano and ask its aid. The name of the dragon is "Lombardia", the legendary Wing of Heaven!

---

~~Sleeping Volcano~~

[They move along until they reach the Crater.]

Voice in the Crater: You puny little beings... Disappear! Get out of my sight! This is no place for inferior beings like you.

Ashley: Who are you?

Voice in the Crater: I am the ruler of this land--the legendary wings who rend the sky.

Lilka: You can't possibly be... Are you...?

Ashley: Lom...bar...dia.

[Lombardia appears before them.]

Lombardia: It has been years since I have spoken to humans like this. Of course, it appears there are a few non-humans among you as well.

Tim: I didn't know Dragons could speak.

Lombardia: Humans believe they're the only intelligent beings around.

Tim: Sorry.

Ashley: Our being able to converse will sure speed things up! Lombardia! Filgaia is currently being...

Lombardia: ...is getting consumed by a parallel universe, right?

Ashley: How did you know?

Lombardia: Everything, absolutely everything is exactly the same as before. It's the same as when the Dragon Dimension we lived in was consumed.

Brad: The Dragon Dimension?

Lombardia: We Dragons are beings with mechanical bodies. Our homeland was originally a different "universe". But our world was swallowed in a wave of consumption and many were lost forever. The few who were able to change dimensions arrived but couldn't adapt, and simply rotted away.

Ashley: Then, will you lend us a hand, Lombardia? We are fighting to stop the enroachment on this universe.

Lombardia: I refuse.

Lilka: Why? For what reason?

Lombardia: No one can stop the consumption of the world much less human beings, a lower lifeform.

Ashley: Even so, we aren't going to give up.

Lombardia: You have only the smallest chance.

Tim: But there's still a chance.

Brad: But it's a chance cloze to zero.

Lilka: It's just a matter of effort and that can always grow. Right?

Ashley: In other words, that's right. We want your help, Lombardia!

Lombardia: Very well. But I have one condition. I want to witness with my own eyes the power of humans struggling to overcome the odds.

[BOSS: Dragon Caliber - Lombardia]

Lombardia: Humans-- show me your powers! If I see a glimmer of possibility, a light, in your strength, you may use my wings as you wish.

[The party fights Lombardia.]

Lombardia: Why hang on? Why hold on? I am Lombardia. No matter what powers you display, they'll never reach me. But why? Why?

Ashley: It'll reach, though there is still some distance remaining.

Lilka: I won't give up. If I gave up so easily, Sis would laugh at me.

Lombardia: .....

[The volcano starts shaking.]

Tim: The earth's energy is heating up rapidly!

Kanon: One consequence of the battle is that a dormant volcano is active.

Brad: Escape... Holy...

Ashley: Lombardia!

[Lombardia takes ARMS out of the volcano before it erupts.]

-----  
[Lombardia is on the catapult deck of the Chateau.]

[NARRATION]: The truth about the enroachment on Filgaia is that is started with the wanderings of the Dragons, as told by the Dragon Caliber, Lombardia. Different from all in this world are the Dragons, living beings with mechanical bodies from another world, the Dragon Dimension. But our world was swallowed in the enroachment and many friends were lost forever. No matter how powerful the Dragons may be, they're powerless against the

conceptual being called a "world". Those few who could cross the dimensions, landed in the parallel universe starting at Filgaia but most couldn't release their powers in the new environment and rotted away. The Dragons are one of the lifeforms being swallowed up by the enroaching parallel universe.

[In the Chateau's strategic planning room...]

Irving: According to the information from Lombardia, the enroaching... parallel universe comes from the "Kuiper Belt", the birthplace of comets, the... bearers of all ill omens. I will have ARMS aid me in plans against the Kuiper Belt.

Brad: Physical attacks will be of no use at all. What will we do?

Irving: My first clue was actually Ashley.

Ashley: Me?

Irving: A "World" can be seen as a giant "Life". And physical methods cannot affect something as shapeless as "Life" itself. But... If there is a "Vessel" to contain such a "Life", then we may be able to combat it.

Kanon: Just as with Ashley, we must trap the "World" in something. But how?

Irving: I have an idea. Mana is released at the terminals at of Ralines, the Raypoints. "Mana" is the life energy of Filgaia. If we shape the Mana into an artificial life form, we can trap the enroachment inside it. The Kuiper Belt will the live in the Trapezhohedron the prison crafted of Mana.

Brad: So we will give the root of the enroachment a mortal conception.

Irving: There is not a moment to lose. It will require all of ARMS' strength to exterminate the Kuiper Belt! You must seek out the 4 Raypoints scattered across Filgaia. The goal of this mission is to set them free. Use clues in various places to free the Raypoints. The future of Filgaia is resting on your shoulders.

[The party exits the Chateau.]

[TUTORIAL]: \*Press the (X) button to make the Lombardia go forward. Press the left and right directional buttons or the [L1][R1] buttons to turn. The up and down directional buttons change altitude. Down to ascend and up to descend. The Lombardia cannot land where Ashley cannot walk, such as on water or a mountaintop. You cannot land in a forest, rocky area or other unstable spots even if walkable. To land the Lombardia, press the (O) button while over a large, flat area. Touch the Lombardia and press the (X) button to re-board.

=====

#####  
#[0.1] Crimson Castle #  
#####

~~Crimson Castle~~

[With Lombardia, the party has access to places they have never been before.  
They find a castle south of Guild Galad.]

[They enter the castle and proceeds downward. On the way, they find a couple  
of stone slabs with warning messages on it.]

[MESSAGE]: \*To darkness this path does lead. He who is from the land of the  
sun must leave of life to him is dear.

[MESSAGE] \*Fools! Mistake not foolhardiness for bravery! Know thou art  
headed down the path to darkness.

[MESSAGE]: \*The King of the Dark World has ruled Filgaia since time  
immemorial.

[ARMS followed the path until they reach a coffin.]

Marivel: Keep the noise down! Where do you think you are!?!

[Marivel comes out of the coffin.]

Marivel: Ah, Ashley and company. I didn't know you were making that  
noise. So, what brings you here? Surely the "Time of Promise"  
has not yet come.

Lilka: Hey! What is Marivel doing here!?!

Tim: This is where I heard the legendary Immortals supposedly live.

Marivel: We are the Immortals! The Crimson Nobles, supreme species of  
Filgaia! We are absolute, true, one-and-only rulers of Filgaia!

Lilka: Oh, brother. What a windbag.

Brad: I never knew the Crimson Nobles really existed.

Kanon: Well, the legendary Lord Blazer is living inside Ashley. Is the  
idea of Crimson Nobles still living in Filgaia any weirder?

Marivel: Well, what do you want. Ashley? Surely you did not come to  
chat.

Ashley: As you say, the "Time of Promise" has not yet come. But Filgaia  
now faces the most serious threat in its history.

Marivel: Yes... the Kuiper Belt.

Ashley: Not even Lord Blazer could stand up to the might of Kuiper Belt.  
That's why I need you to fight on our side Marivel, as you once  
fought with Anastasia! We are fighting to save Filgaia!  
Will you join us?

Marivel: Hmm... First Odessa, then Kuiper Belt. Why must such evil attack  
our beloved Filgaia? As Filgaia's true rulers, we will tolerate  
no more of this outrage!

Ashley: I'm putting my foot down NOW!

Marivel: But I'll have you know... I am doing this because it is my duty



as supreme species to protect Filgaia. We simply have a common objective. Otherwise, a proud Crimson Noble would never help you lowly humans. Do not forget that!

[Marivel looks for something in her coffin.]

Marivel: Whoops. I almost forgot this.

[Marivel gets the tool: "Electel".]

Marivel: The Electel zaps anyone in front of you when you press the ([]). And I see you're still using that pathetic Map Scope of yours, eh? Out of pity for you, we will use a bit of Lost Technology to give it a cute but exciting upgrade. Don't look so skeptical! Just leave everything to us! I'll show you how Guild Galad technology can't even hold a candle to ours. Heh heh.

[Marivel upgrades the Map Scope.]

Marivel: There! All finished! How's that for a nice power-up, eh? Ha ha! What do you mean it looks the same? Amateur! Now you can view the Map Scope while in transit by projecting the image onto your retina!

[Marivel joins the party.]

=====

```
#####  
#[0.2] Promised Catacombs #  
#####
```

[Marivel reads a book in Meria Boule Castle, entitled: Crimson Noble Sanctuary.]

\*Crimson Noble Sanctuary  
The promised land of the Crimson Noble is now forsaken. We Crimson Nobles were torn asunder by the Blaze of Disaster. And now, I am the only one left. I must preserve the Crimson Noble's honor and protect this masterless place. We'll meet at our promised land, an island south of masterless castle.  
--by Isabel Graceland--

[The party travels to a large island in Southwest Filgaia. They find the Promised Catacombs in the middle of a forest.]

~~Promised Catacombs~~

Marivel: .....Father...  
.....Mother...  
.....

Ashley: What is it? Marivel?

Marivel: It's...it's nothing.

[Marivel can be seen alone.]

Marivel: Why? Why am I all alone?

[Marivel looks around.]

Marivel: Yes, I'm always alone. I am one of the proud Crimson Nobles, the people chosen to live for eternity.

[Marivel walks.]

Marivel: But my tribe no longer exists. Why am I the only one still alive? If I had died with the rest of my tribe, I wouldn't be suffering. Anastasia... was my last friend. Hundreds of years have passed since I saw her. Aside from goodbyes being too hard... my life is eternal. People get old and die. I've seen many births and many deaths. I no longer have friends in this world. That's why I don't need friends. That's my decision. But now... there are many people who need me. So, I've decided. I will join these people who are living now for a little while. I know we'll have to say good-by someday, but I'll have no regrets. That's what I hope for.

[Marivel's scene ends.]

Ashley: Marivel, were you crying?

Marivel: What are you saying?! I am no weakling! Well, we're finished here. Time to move on. Let's go. Filgaia doesn't have much time left.

[The party leaves.]

=====  
#####  
#[2.07] Liberate the Raypoints #  
#####

<Call Menu>

Amy: >You want the locations of the Raypoints? I'll tell you. One is near a large island far north of Meria. Another is west of Sylvaland. Another is near the Sielje Region and the last is near Guild Galad. The energy reaction is too weak to pinpoint the exact locations. It's not my fault! Hey, why don't you just ask the people who live there? Good idea, yeah? I'm so smart!

-----

\_\_\_\_\_  
/Raypoint Flam/  
????????????????

[Lilka & Co. into the dungeon until they find the Raypoint's Knight.]

Lilka: Even if my power is insufficient, I can't stand by and do nothing!

[BOSS: Spriggan - Flam Knight]

[The party eliminates the knight. They move deeper into the Raypoint until they find the Flam's Mana Crystal.]

Voice reaching Lilka's heart: Hey, Lilka, young daughter.

Lilka: Who's that peeking into my heart?

Voice reaching Lilka's heart: I am the will of power. The Spirit of Flam.  
Lilka... If you want to liberate the Raypoint I control, show me  
your powers.

Lilka: My sorcery... The power of magic...

Spirit of Flam: You!!!! Understand that only those with supreme sorcery will  
be able to liberate the Raypoint.

Lilka: If... If my sorcery is not fully developed, then the release of  
the Raypoint is...

Spirit of Flam: Understand that it would be impossible. Furthermore, if you  
fail once the Raypoint cannot be liberated for all of eternity.

Lilka: Wait...Wait! So you're saying I can make no mistake?

Spirit of Flam: What's wrong? Why are you hesitating?

Lilka: ..... I can't do this! I know I'm going to blow it again.  
I'm not good at this like my sister. It's so impossible!

[Lilka appears alone in a space where the blue sky can be seen  
in the background.]

Lilka: Magic is the power to do anything. It's the power to be like...  
my big sister who I so adore. I had always believed in that, but  
it's not true. My Crest Sorcery can't do everything.

[A glitter of light appears, circling around Lilka.]

Lilka's Sister's Voice: Are you apprehensive?

Lilka: Sister? Is that you? Where are you?

Lilka's Sister's Voice: ..... Why do you belittle yourself? You are  
you. You don't have magic so you can become someone else.  
Right?

Lilka: That's not true. The person everyone wants to have here is you,  
my older sister. That's why I've always tried to fill in for  
you by going all out.

Lilka's Sister's Voice: You aren't my replacement. I mean, come on.  
There are things only you can do.

Lilka: Things only I can do?

Lilka's Sister's Voice: You never gave up. Don't you remember? At the  
Millennium Puzzle, didn't you stay to the finish?  
You didn't give up like I did.

Lilka: It was because you were by my side. Yet, I wasn't able to do  
anything. I remember. I almost gave up. I wasn't able to do  
anything with my magic.

Lilka's Sister's Voice: Don't forget, Lilka. Your magic can be used by anyone, and can do anything... Your magic isn't Crest Sorcery. Try to remember the special spell I taught you.

Lilka: ..... Hocus Pocus Fizzipocus.

Lilka's Sister's Voice: Exactly. It repels fire and restores laughter. I'm sure you can use it.

Lilka: Will I be able to do it? There's someone I like, someone I want to protect. I want to see their laughter.

Lilka's Sister's Voice: You can do it. But there's one thing you need to be careful about.

Lilka: One thing? What is it, Sis?

Lilka's Sister's Voice: Promise me one more thing. Don't cry anymore. Come on, laugh, Lilka.

Lilka: Sure. I'm OK. I'm fine.

Lilka's Sister's Voice: That's right. That's your "magic".

[Lilka appears back at the Raypoint.]

Lilka: ..... Everyone, I'm so sorry. I lost my confidence. It's not like me at all. But I'm all right now! I'm going to liberate the Raypoint. My sister made me realize. Something I can do. Something only I can do... and that's my magic. I'm not a Crest Sorceress. I knew that, but forgot somewhere along the way. I forgot that magic can be used by anyone and can do almost anything. Even when I stumble and make mistakes, my magic doesn't surrender. I'm not afraid to fail. I'll even liberate the Raypoint. I love Filgaia. I love everyone! Everyone! Don't turn away from me. I'll show you my "magic".

[NARRATION]: \*Filgaia's life energy-- Flam's "Mana" has been liberated and is quietly filling up. Flam's "Mana" will awaken future possibilities in Lilka.

[Lilka acquires the Force: "Dual Cast".]

[TUTORIAL]: \*The DualCast is a force skill for Lilka. The magic will be concentrated and activate two Crest Sorcery commands consecutively.

---

/Raypoint Geo/

~~~~~

[Brad & Co. explore the Raypoint until they find its knight.]

Brad: So, Raypoint's protector knight has arrived. You must let me through.

[BOSS: Spriggan - Geo Knight]

[They defeat the Knight and move deeper in the Raypoint until they find

Geo's Mana Crystal. Brad moves up the staircase, alone.]

Voice reaching Brad's heart: Hey, Brad. You with a deceptive shadow in your heart.

Brad: Directly to my heart? Is that what you mean?

Voice reaching Brad's heart: I am the will of power. The Spirit of Geo. Hey, Brad. If you want to liberate the Raypoint I control, you must expose the truth.

Brad: The truth?!

[Brad is alone, in a space where the blue sky can be seen in the background.]

Brad: So you're saying you can see inside my heart?

Spirit of Geo: Lies turn to shadows and fall as night, losing the Raypoint's light. Until you reveal your true self to me, the Raypoint won't be released.

Brad: The truth... I am still myself. Nothing's changed. And my truth is me myself!

Spirit of Geo: Brad Evans... You are the hero from the past, are now an ARMS member, and are our future possibility. But those are "facts", and not the "truth".

Brad: Facts and truth...

Spirit of Geo: The shadow of lies interrupt the truth's light. When I said before that unless you reveal your true self, the Raypoint won't be released by it's not "facts", but "truth" that expels the shadow of lies. The truth releases the Raypoint.

Brad: My heart has lies... Yes, I carry the lie that I am "me", Brad Evans. So, it was necessary to do this for the liberation and future of Slayheim. For the future of the liberated, Slayheim, Brad Evans was necessary! So I threw myself out and became another "me". That was my promise to "him".

Spirit of Geo: So you became a "hero" because of your promise.

Brad: There was something more important than winning...the battle of liberation. It was to unite the people of Slayheim. That was more important. If we had only won we wouldn't have been any different from the enemy, the Slayheim throne. If we only threw power around, nothing would change. I am... The Slayheim Liberation Army is a unit that took on the silly ideals "I" professed. That's why the Liberation Army couldn't lose "me".

Spirit of Geo: Are you saying a "hero" isn't power?

Brad: At least there are those who think that way. A "hero" isn't just power, but a symbol of power. Like the <Sword Mage>, peace isn't delivered by the "hero". A "hero" should be a symbol for people to emulate and create their own peace. A "hero" isn't bestowed upon anyone nor is it something to cling to. For the purpose of peace, the people joined together to achieve a common goal. And once you grab it with your own hands, real peace will

come. That was "my" hope for the future.

Spirit of Geo: Then I must ask the false "hero"... Why are you still a "hero"? Your battle should be over.

Brad: I'm not hung up on the fact that I'm "me". That I am "me" means that my ties to "him" are the ties to keep fighting. By being "me", "his" ideals have become a part of me. The guys from ARMS don't rely on "me" to be their "hero", but fight with their own power. "I" am a person from the past as opposed to the future which must be obtained. I don't rely on "myself". I'm fighting together with them for the future, for tomorrow.

Spirit of Geo: You want the Raypoint I released for the future you desire. Very well. Then, in my presence I want you to disclose the unchanging eternal truth.

Brad: I am definitely not the Hero of Slayheim. But I'll fight to save the people and bring peace to the world. That will never change. I am Brad Evans, and that's the truth! And, the other truth is...

Spirit of Geo: The other truth?

Brad: Your standing in our way confronting us, is a rouse. You are not an obstacle. you're only a test to bring out our hidden potential. That's the other truth!

Spirit of Geo: I never imagined such an interesting answer. You certainly showed me your truth. There are no changes or shadows to the truth you spoke of. I'll release the Raypoint for the future you desire, for the future you want!

[Back in the Raypoint, Ashley and the others approach Brad.]

Lilka: Brad!

Ashley: You're all right, Brad!

Tim: Look, Brad! See!

Kanon: Brad, your power liberated the Raypoint.

Brad: My power?

[NARRATION]: \*Filgaia's life energy-- Geo's "Mana" has been liberated and is quietly filling up. Geo's "Mana" will awaken future possibilities asleep in Brad.

[Brad acquires the Force: "Boost".]

[TUTORIAL]: \*The Boost is a force skill for use by Brad. The runaway Heavy ARM will deliver an attack on the enemy 3 times the normal force.

=====

\_\_\_\_\_  
/Raypoint Wing/

~~~~~

[Tim & Co. explore the Raypoint until they encounter its knight.]

Tim: I want to protect everyone. Don't get in my way!

[BOSS: Spriggan - Wing Knight]

[They defeat the knight and move forward until they find Wing's Mana Crystal.]

Voice Reaching Tim's Heart: Tim, the boy to be sacrificed who doesn't know the answer.

Tim: Are you calling me? Who are you?

Voice Reaching Tim's Heart: I am the will of power. The spirit of Wing. If you wish to liberate the Raypoint I control, you must reveal your reason to fight.

Tim: The reason I fight?

Spirit of Wing: You!!! Know that only when you find the reason to fight within your heart will the Raypoint be liberated.

Tim: And if I don't find a reason to fight, then...

Spirit of Wing: Understand that it would be impossible. Furthermore, if you cannot find a reason to fight, the Raypoint won't be liberated for eternity.

Tim: A reason to fight? An answer I've always been searching for...

[Tim is in a space where the blue sky can be seen in the background.]

Tim: The reason I fight...? I wonder what it is? Gaia asked me the same thing at the Sacrificial Altar. The reason I fight...

[An image of the Village Chief appears.]

Village Chief: Fate...No one can escape the wheel of fate.

Tim: You're wrong! I could never risk my own life for something like that!

[The Village Chief disappears. Then, an image of another Tim appears.]

The Other Tim: It's because you don't want to die, because you're afraid of death.

Tim: In the beginning that was true. But that's no longer it. When I thought of someone beside myself, I came into my powers.

[The Other Tim disappears. Then, an image of Colette appears.]

Colette: Who is it?

Tim: It's...

Colette: .....

Tim: That's right. I wanted to protect you. And in order to protect you, I decided to work really hard.

[The image of the Village Chief re-appears.]

Village Chief: Then Tim, there is only one road for you to choose.

Colette: Please! Just drop dead! If Tim dies, Filgaia will be saved.  
Not just me, but everyone will be saved.

[The Other Tim re-appears.]

The Other Tim: Then it's decided. I am the "Pillar". I have the power to  
protect what is important. It's easy. Just do on and die.

Pooka: That's not true!

[The images disappear.]

Tim: Pooka.

Pooka: I've thought about it too. That's the destiny you were headed.  
But the answer Tim'd find is a different answer if you looked.  
I'll think about it too. Find it yourself. That'll be your real  
answer.

Tim: I want to protect the people who are important to me. That part  
is true. And in order to do that, I'm willing to risk my life.

Pooka: So then what's stopping you?

Tim: I can't protect the people I want to protect that way. That's  
what I think! Let's say I die and save Filgaia, but... if  
something happens again later, it's Colette who will be the  
Sacrificial Pillar. To not be able to do anything when a person  
close to you is facing a life threatening danger...  
I won't do it!

Pooka: That's it.

Tim: That's right! The reason I risk my life in battle is not to save  
the world! That's not the only reason. It's also to create a  
future where no one else has to be sacrificed. To save the ones  
I care about, I need to prove that the world can be saved without  
a Sacrificial Pillar. I won't die. I am going to live and still  
protect the world. This is the reason I fight.

Pooka: Good work figuring that out. You thought about it and found the  
answer. It's important to do that.

Tim: It's all because Pooka was here by my side. But is this really  
OK? Pooka's orders from Gaia were to turn me into the "Pillar"  
right?

Pooka: That's right. But, I don't regret it.

Tim: Pooka?

Pooka: I came up with it all on my own. And I guided you to a future  
other than the one you were dealt.

Pooka: .....

Pooka: Pookas are meant to have no will themselves. They are to act



only according to orders.

Tim: What are you saying? What is it, Pooka?

Pooka: I can assume other forms because I don't have a "self". But being with you, I was able to think and act on my own. Leading you to a different future wasn't anyone else's idea, but my own. I have found my own "self".

Tim: .....

Pooka: By discovering "myself", I am no longer Pooka. So, this is good-bye.

Tim: I don't like it, Pooka.

Pooka: It was fun.

[Tim appears to be back in the Raypoint.]

Tim: Finally. Finally I found a reason to fight, but then I lose what is important to me.

???: Did you lose something?

[Pooka appears from the crystal.]

Tim: Pooka! How? How can you still be alive?

Pooka: I've sure got a bad reputation. When did I die?

Tim: What? But I thought...

Pooka: It's true that by finding "self", the old Pooka no longer exists. But that was a step in transforming the new Pooka.

Tim: Pooka.

Pooka: Once, in the sea of light, I, Pooka, turned back into the light. And by gaining insight into "self", my powers are greater because I can perceive other beings more clearly.

[NARRATION]: \*Filgaia's life energy-- Wing's "Mana" has been liberated and is quietly filling up. Wing's "Mana" will awaken possibilities for the future asleep in Tim.

[Tim acquires the Force: "Hi-Combo".]

[TUTORIAL]: \*The Hi-Combo is a force skill for Tim. By increasing synchronicity between Pooka and the Medium, the Guardian can attack best.

[Tim hugs Pooka.]

Tim: From now on I'm going to use a stronger Medium. Whoa! I don't care what it is! Wow! I did it!

Pooka: (It was when I was reborn in the Sea of Light that I first heard of it. I'll never forget this voice that taught Pooka about "Pooka". I'm glad I tried this.)



"hero", I'd be able to get out of this situation.

Kanon: That's right. I always thought about how to escape from that dark slum. And I...

Aisha: ...made the "hero" the authority. That's how it was, right?

Kanon: But I was always lonely. A world just like that slum had spread everywhere.

Aisha: What I sought wasn't a "hero". I wanted a group of friends who needed me. So you wanted to be needed. That's why you tried to be a "hero", right?

Kanon: That's right. That's why I wanted to be a "hero", to find... a place where I belonged, a place of friends. But...

Aisha: Why do I feel so estranged even when everyone's by my side? You should know...

Kanon: Because I refused everyone...

Aisha: Be brave and reach out your hand... If I do that, they'll probably accept me. The belief becomes the bond that ties me to them. Accept and recognize me as one of the group. Broken bionic implants can shorten one's life. Don't refuse me. It'll help me get back my original body of living flesh.

Kanon: My real self...

Aisha: Let's go home together, to Aisha Bernadette.

[Kanon appears to be back in the Raypoint.]

Spirit of Muse: Why? How? Kanon, why do you not have your original body, but have acquired bionic implants again?

Kanon: Because that's what I wished.

Spirit of Muse: That's right. You wished not for the body you were born with, but for the power to fight, for a bionic body. That's what I don't understand.

Kanon: You've spent a lot of time obsessing over something trite. Heroes aren't passed through blood relations. What you do determines the birth of a hero. There's something stronger flowing in me than blood. It's clearly more important than the <Sword Mage's> blood. It's friends I have been searching for. The constricted body I have always sought is the "bond" that ties me to my friends.

Ashley: Kanon.

Kanon: This is what they mean when they say to accept all that is given. I feel I have in me both "the power to fight" and "bonds with my friends". Confusion... doesn't exist in me.

Spirit of Muse: The confusion is gone. The Raypoint will be liberated.

Kanon: Fight with us. I am just like you. I want to protect Filgaia.

[NARRATION]: \*Filgaia's life energy-- The Muse's "Mana" has been freed and is quietly filling up. Muse's "Mana" will awaken future possibilities asleep in Kanon.

[Kanon acquires the Force: "Gat Lv.4".]

[TUTORIAL]: \*It'll deliver a force Lv. 4 multi-staged attack on a single enemy.

=====

[The communicator beeps.]

-Marivel: What a junky communicator. I better let them know that something fancier would be more appropriate to my tastes.

-Kanon: It's from Irving.

-Tim: This must be my next assignment. Please wait a minute.

-Lilka: OK. OK. I understand. I'll leave immediately.

-Brad: Mission Accomplished! Time to request my next assignment.

-Ashley: I better report the liberation of the Raypoint.

Ashley: Raypoint liberation complete! Mana, the life blood of Filgaia, is free!

Irving: >Sure seems that way. I register an increase in Mana here too. That just might be the ticket! Ask Meria Boule, Sylvaland and Guild Galad for permission to use the Live Reflectors! We commence operations against Kuiper Belt upon your return. Return at once! Over and out!

-----

```
#####  
#[2.08] Trapezohedron #  
#####
```

[A ball of mass can be seen floating in the sea of stars.]

Kate: Messages from Meria, Sylvaland and Guild Galad all received! All three countries cede the right to use the respective Live Reflectors to the ARMS. For the next 12 hours, all the Live Reflectors are under the control of the ARMS. We hereby commence the maneuver to capture the enroaching parallel universe, the Kuiper Belt! Connect via the wireless each Live Reflector to the Mana released from the Raypoints. Adjustment of the reflection angle ...Imprisonment by the life energy Mana... Deploy the Trapezohedron!

[The cage of Mana surrounds the ball of mass and falls to Filgaia.]

[In the Chateau's bridge.]

Kate: Live Reflector connections are OK. Reflection rate is down 8%, all OK. ....

Kate: It's hard to believe Meria Boule, Sylvaland, and Guild Galad are all cooperating. Freeing all of the Live Reflector and fighting together - unthinkable before.

Amy: It's miraculous, isn't it? Recent enemies working together... It's because all of Filgaia is threatened. There's no choice but to join forces. I've got to do my part, too! The Raypoint's telego-mixer is operating at 84%. Mana supply proceeding as planned. Everything seems to be going as well as we could hope. What is the capture ratio of the Kuiper Belt in the blockaded region?

Amy: What!? How can that be?

Irving: What's wrong?

Amy: The capture ratio is only 0.024%?  
That's way too low! It's not my fault.

Irving: I can't believe it! The body isn't trapping it!  
What should we do?

Ashley: We should get out there! Right, Irving?

Irving: .....

Irving: There may be unforeseen dangers, but there's no choice. Right now the Kuiper Belt is partially imprisoned in a cage of Mana. It is almost alive. It is vulnerable because it's not a "World", but a "Being". We must attack now! This is our one chance. If we miss it, there will never be another. ARMS must enter the blockaded region and annihilate the Kuiper Belt!

Kate: Now measuring the Trapezohedron's touch-down point. It will be the "Land of Death and Destruction", at the center of the old Slayheim salt flats.

Irving: Hurry to that point now!

<Call Menu>

Amy: >The Trapezohedron touched down northeast of Quartly. It's right between Archeim and Quartly. It's just a little to the east.

[ARMS finds the Trapezohedron. The communicator beeps.]

Irving: >Your reaction pattern contains some strange noise. Apparently you came into contact with the Trapezohedron. The Trapezohedron is linked to the Live Reflectors and serves as a prison. It must hold the powerful Kuiper Belt, so it is built to be incredibly strong. So you only get one chance to get to the Kuiper Belt. The Kuiper Belt is a parallel universe. It is like a giant living entity. By annihilating Kuiper Belt, you can escape the grip of the force field. Failure is not an option. You must prepare carefully for this mission. That is all.

-----  
~~Trapezohedron~~

Ashley: This is the tip of the Kuiper Belt held in the Mana prison. The pseudo-lifeform--"the enroaching parallel universe", the Kuiper Belt.

Lilka: Am I imagining this? It's not expanding, is it? It's almost as if something is hatching from an egg.

Brad: Whoa! It's hatching!!! It's the larva of the enroaching parallel universe!

[BOSS: Enroaching Parallel Universe - Larva]

[ARMS enters battle against the Larva and defeats it.]

Ashley: Did we win? Our attack seems to have had an effect on the pseudo lifeform, the enroaching parallel universe.

Tim: The Kuiper Belt was a section that broke off the main body, right?

Kanon: What we destroyed was only a small section of it. What we really need to destroy is still out there.

[The communicator beeps.]

Ashley: Irving!

Irving: >The mission was a failure, just like you warned us... The Kuiper Belt released part of itself just before the core was sealed.

Ashley: You mean what we fought was just...

Irving: >The tail of the lizard, yes. Anyway, just come back to Valeria Chateau. The Trapezohedron will self-destruct any minute.

=====  
#####  
#[2.09] Fiery Wreckage #  
#####

[The party is back at the Chateau's strategic planning room.]

Irving: We have eliminated part of it, but the Kuiper Belt is still strong. The sky of Filgaia is still dark, and the hearts of people are just as shadowed.

Brad: Our plan against the Kuiper Belt... Did the Trapezohedron avail us not at all? Have we failed then?

Irving: I think ARMS has lost this time. But even if we were defeated in this battle, we still have the war. Even in this darkness, we were able to see one critical thing. Yes, we have found the way to trap the Kuiper Belt! Treating a "World" like a spirit and trapping it in a live "Vessel" can be effective.

Lilka: In that case... Why don't we try sealing it in the Trapezohedron once more? If we can still trap a critical mass of the Kuiper Belt in the Trapezohedron... We can do better against it this

time!

Tim: Unfortunately, we've used up all the Mana built up at the Raypoints. Since the "Pillar" heir appeared, the faint light of the world we've seen has been disappearing. A large amount of Mana must have been consumed from Filgaia.

Tim: ..... It would be hundreds of years before so much Mana accumulated at the Raypoint again.

Irving: And by that time...

Kanon: ...the world will already have been eaten away.

Ashley: Have we no more ideas to use? There must be something. There just has to be something! If we don't try something, everything living in Filgaia will be...

Irving: ..... Sometimes it's better to go slowly than quickly. One more error will be fatal.

Ashley: But...

Irving: At the moment, I am more worried about your health. You all must be very weary by now. I cannot ignore that. Today, I would like you to rest.

Lilka: Everything is OK, right? We can still save Filgaia, can't we?

Irving: There is always another way. You just have to find it.

Irving: (There is always a last resort to be taken.)

Irving: I am the commander. You all must rest up for our next action.

[The meeting ends.]

[Irving is looking at a portrait in his room.]

Irving: ..... It is possible to destroy a "World" by sealing it in a living "Vessel". I'm certain that is the only way to defeat the Kuiper Belt. But... The Raypoint's Mana is so depleted using any more might drain the very sun of life. Using the Mana prison, the Trapezohedron, would kill our life-giving planet! That hand is played out.

Irving: ..... In which case, how can we lure the Kuiper Belt into a body without the Trapezohedron? That's it! We must prepare a "Vessel" other than the Trapezohedron.

Irving: ..... We must use Ashley Winchester! He will be our "drastic measures"! An ancestor of Anastasia was the trapped Lord Blazer... the Blaze of Disaster. Such a giant being was controlled by housing it in a person. Therefore the Kuiper Belt should be able to be housed in a human "Vessel", too! But a human "Vessel" already contains one "Spirit". Two beings sharing one "Vessel", like Ashley, is a tantamount to a miracle.

Irving: A miracle... We need a miracle... The Valeria blood that runs in

my veins is that of the "Hero" who drove back the Lord Blazer.

Irving: ..... I will not wait for a miracle. Miracles are worth most when you bring them about yourself.

[Altaecia enters.]

Altaecia: Elder brother? Did you call? It is so late at night...

Irving: That is so, Altaecia. We need a capacity to match that of the Trapezohedron. We need a "Vessel" large enough to trap the enroaching parallel universe.

Irving: ..... The "Demon Summoning".

Altaecia: "Demon Summoning"? Is that part of the black magic which you] used to research? Wasn't that black magic forbidden for humans to use?

Altaecia: ..... Elder brother, you don't mean...?

Irving: I need something wide and deep enough to hold a "World"... The only choice is... A human "Vessel"!

Irving: ..... Please understand, Altaecia. We must entrust everything to the Valeria blood, for we are descendants of the "Hero". Little sister, I need you not as the <Sword Magess>, but as the <Madonna of Destruction>.

Altaecia: Elder brother!

Irving: I need you. You and the family blood flowing through you.

Altaecia: ..... Will I be able to fight with you, elder brother? May I be by your side always?

Irving: From now on, always together. I want you to bear my sins with me, Altaecia.

[The screen fades to black.]

Altaecia: I have never felt closer to my brother than tonight.

[Then next day, ARMS is gathered in the strategic planning room.]

Irving: Good morning, everyone. I hope you are rested up for your next mission.

Ashley: I think I have found a solution.

Irving: Monsters are appearing in the land east of Halmetz across the inlet. I want ARMS to go there immediately and investigate the cause.

Ashley: Wait a second... Why do that now? What will we do about the Kuiper Belt?

Irving: ARMS must respond to everything, large or small!

Ashley: That's true, but...



Irving: I'm depending on you! Everyone! Get moving!

[ARMS moves as Irving ordered.]

Irving: Be careful, everyone! Soon I will solve everything.  
Soon we will save the world.

-----  
[The party fires a fiery wreckage on the place Irving mentioned.]

~~Fiery Wreckage~~

[They explore the area, and start turning on some computers. It gave them fragmented information about Odessa. They turn on the central computer.]

Brad: This looks like the wreckage from the Heimdall Gazzo. It's said you can access Odessa's main data bank from here. What do you want to do, Ashley?

Ashley: Odessa's data bank... Vinsfeld must have meant the Kuiper Belt when he spoke of an enroaching menace. We might be able to get some information. It could be a waste of time, but it's worth a try.

Brad: He spoke as if he knew something... He knew something we didn't. It's not unlikely.

Lilka: Anyway, let's look. If nothing comes up, no big deal!

Brad: Let's split up and research this.

[They split up and examine the computers in the room.]

Lilka: Hmmm... Even if we research data on Odessa now, it doesn't look like anything good will result.

Brad: Hey! What kind of joke is this?

[Everyone gathers around Brad.]

Lilka: Let me see...Odessa's Membership Power, Activity Strategies...

Brad: No. The Section after that.

Ashley: Funding sources? The organization lacked operational funds. So these are their financial bankers.

Ashley: ..... Impossible! Why would that name be listed here?

Tim: This must be wrong! It has to be!

Ashley: Irving Vold Valeria... Why is his name here?

[The communicator beeps. Ashley answers it.]

Kate: >Oh, my... Holy...! Oh, jeez, we're done for!

Ashley: Calm yourself down! Just what is going on? We just found

something horrible over here!

Amy: >This is A. As usual, it's pandemonium here. Irving and Altaecia are gone! They're not in the Chateau! They left a note, so we know where they went.

Ashley: Understood! We'll hurry back right now!

[(OPTIONAL) The party finds Vinsfeld's sword sticking on the ground.]

\*I remember seeing this sword before. Calamity silently floats, the "Mad Mountains" scream out a lament. The ideal is death. Deep-seated delusion doesn't die. Even if the flesh rots, this man's remaining thoughts become a fiery wreckage that stands in one's way.

[BOSS: Remaining Poltergeist - Ghost]

[The party vanishes Vinsfeld's ghost.]

-Ashley: Vinsfeld, return to the world of the dead! This world is for those who believe and live in the future. This world isn't for ghosts, like you!

-Brad: This is what they mean when they say he couldn't quite die. With your death, Odessa was destroyed! This world is not for you to return to.

-Lilka: I never imagined you'd show up as a ghost! I mean, this affection has to die with you. Don't show up again, OK?!

-Tim: Strong thoughts can show up in shapes like this. Did you really want world domination that much?

-Kanon: Dead people shouldn't stay in our world. If you can't cut ties to this world I will be the sword to send you back to Hades over and over again.

-Marivel: It's things like this that make humans so... While I admire your efforts to return to this world, you're dead, so don't bother returning.

-----  
[ARMS returns back to the Chateau. They read the note, on the bridge's monitor.]

While you all are getting this, I will be preparing for the final plan against the Kuiper Belt. To beat Kuiper Belt, which exists only as a concept now, we must cause it to materialize. The Trapezohedron is useless now. I must take actions I know will be regrettable. These will be my drastic measures. Whatever people may say, I will sacrifice all for Filgaia. It's true that my actions in this cause have not all been beyond reproach. I do not ask for forgiveness. I will pay whatever price is required. I will now give your final mission. You will travel to the "heart of Filgaia". The "heart of Filgaia" is the center of the world and the root of this planet's life. If you still believe in me, please grant me this wish. Then...

Pray for the future of Filgaia, Irving Vold Valeria

Lilka: What will we do from now on?

Tim: There is no one to command us. But...

Brad: We already know what we're fighting for. We have a purpose that can guide us.

Kanon: No one else will lead us. It is time to lead ourselves.

Marivel: That talk is all fine, but I just want to protect what's mine. I will not let anyone ruin the world I live in, not without a fight.

Ashley: This last battle looks like it will be our last. Everyone needs to decide for themselves. We will disperse for now. We will meet here again at this time tomorrow. Those with a will to fight can come.

=====

#####  
#[2.10] Before the Final Battle #  
#####

[Brad is in T'bok Village. He's with Billy, Merrill, and Rassyu.]

Brad: Come on, listen. All you have to do is listen. I might be the only one without superior officers. But, in return, I have been blessed with the best allies. It must be hard for you. You're stuck listening to me babble.

Merrill: When he's with you, Billy seems so happy.

Brad: Do you think so?

Merrill: Yes. I can tell because we're always together.

Brad: I owe a lot to you. This one was saved from the brink of death because of you and the villagers.

Merrill: I can tell because we're always together. Billy is always with Mister. I can tell. You don't have to say a word.

Brad: I've got something valuable I've been keeping for this one. I survive all battles because of it. It doesn't matter where I am. I am always with this one. We're always together.

Merrill: There's something I've wanted to ask you. That day, Mister was arrested. I was told it was because he was a "hero". Is a "hero" something bad?

Brad: Hmm...I wonder? One thing I do know. I'm not a "hero". I wasn't able to become a "hero". It caused all kinds of trouble. That's my own fault.

[Rassyu sounds sad.]

Merrill: Rassyu is shaking with fear. How long are these conditions

going to last?

Brad: It'll be over soon. I'll make sure it'll be over. It's the only thing I can do now to thank this guy.

-----  
[Lilka is on a classroom in Sielje Region, standing behind the teacher's desk. Terry walks in.]

Terry: You flew out of here, then you just came back without any warning.

Lilka: What! Terry!

Terry: You always, always, are so indecisive.

Lilka: I didn't come back here to see you. It's no big deal.

Terry: Well, that's true but... Um, uh...

Lilka: What?

Terry: I've decided to take the Ketel test.

Lilka: Wow! Really! That really difficult elite class!

Terry: Well, sort of.

Lilka: You've got a rotten personality, but you sure know how to study.

Terry: How, how about taking the test together?

Lilka: Ketel, this is the classroom Sis sat in.

Terry: That's it! I've got it! As a way to get close to Sis, your dream girl, you need to take the test! If you insist, I'll look at your late homework.

[Lilka comes down.]

Lilka: I'm so in awe of you, Sis. But I am Lilka Eleniak. I'm not your Sis. I have something I want to do and in order to do that... Maybe I'll try taking the test too.

Terry: Yeah, let's! I'm sure that'd be best.

Lilka: Well, now...

Terry: You going already? It's too early. I thought we'd go check the test area together now.

Lilka: What is it? I've always wondered why you always seem to pick fights with me. It's not that you like me or anything is it?

Terry: Wh...Who would like Lilka?

Lilka: That's true too. But remember, someday I'll be "a mighty fine woman". I'll be sure to give you the honor of being dumped by me then.

Terry: You...you're making fun of me!

[Lilka walks away.]

Terry: Lilka! Hey, I'm stuck with the cleaning you're supposed to be doing!

Lilka: Thanks. When it's all over and we come back here, I'll help with your cleaning. Where?

Terry: The Astronomical Observatory.

Lilka: That's a rough one. Better take back what I just said.

Terry: You're the one who volunteered. I'm holding you to it! I'm going to get you to help me clean the Astronomical Observatory!

-----  
[Tim and Colette are standing above the altar in the center of Baskar.]

Tim: Boy, haven't seen the sky in a long time.

Colette: Yeah.

Tim: It's different from having something fun disappear. I never imagined that having something so familiar disappear would make me feel so lonely.

Colette: Yeah.

Tim: I've made up my mind. I'm going to bring the sky back to Filgaia. I'm going to show you the sun once again. I promise you.

[Tim and Colette sit down.]

Colette: Then let's shake on it. Give me your left hand. Let's meet again here.

Tim: Colette!

Colette: When someone you wanted nearby leaves, it makes you lonely. Even if the sky disappears I still have sunshine. This here is a special Secret Sun Ball.

Tim: .....

Colette: Give me your left hand and promise me again.

-----  
[Kanon is standing above a windmill in Damzen City.]

Kanon: "Blood" can be inherited, but can "heroism" be inherited as well? "Blood" is a red "bond" that ties you to the past. Invisible "bonds" become chains which bind one over and over again. It's a person's "karma", "fate" and yet to be known "future".

Kanon: Gasping at the suffering, the waiting seeks the dark yet rest is full of traps. But if today is here for tomorrow, vacillating in the "blood" is karma's reward of the hero. Or, Irving boldly becomes a needle which dives under, heading for the heart.

-----

[Marivel is standing above the gate of the Town of Meria, talking to Tony.]

Marivel: Originally, Filgaia was...

Tony: Yep.

Marivel: ...destined to be the ruler of the top of the ecosystem. Yet, they came charging in one by one without permission, then later gave no reason. That's criminal!

Tony: Yep.

Marivel: Now is the time for a true ruler, a Crimson Noble.

Tony: Hey, what's the top of the ecosystem?

Marivel: You don't know? That's the problem with the uneducated.

Tony: It means he's all alone, right?

Marivel: Exactly! The true rulers, Crimson Nobles know solitude intimately.

Tony: That must be very lonely.

Marivel: What are you talking about?

Tony: People like to have friends around.

Marivel: ..... I'm used to things like that. Think about it. I'm the only Crimson Noble left. No one's left who can share those hours with me.

Tony: Then, I could be your friend.

Marivel: Well...

Tony: If a Crimson Noble bites and sucks my blood, can I... share those hours with you? If that's the case, then go for it! I'll be your uh... first friend.

Marivel: ..... You're a hopeless idiot. Think about it. Your resignation from humanity means you could lose a lot.

Tony: Even so! If I did this, I'd be able to be with you forever, right?

Marivel: Oh! Stop it. Stop it. I have no interest in children like you. When you hit those pudgy middle years, I might just consider it.

Tony: Really? Really and truly! All right. Tomorrow I will become middle-aged.

Marivel: You aren't dull, that's for sure. Maybe if I were with you,  
I might not be so lonely after all.

---

[Ashley is on his room, in the bakery. He's with Marina.]

Marina: Did something happen?

Ashley: Sorry. I guess I should say something.

Marina: It's all right. You don't have to force yourself to say  
anything. But...

Ashley: But?

Marina: (If Ashley doesn't talk, I have a feeling I'll end up babbling.)

Ashley: Go ahead.

Marina: Yeah, but I...

Marina: (I don't think I'll be able to express my feeling very well.  
If I put it into words I might end up hurting Ashley again.)

Ashley: Marina...

Marina: In my heart I want to say something different. But when I put  
it into words, I always say something very different. I hate how  
feelings turn into different words when they leave the body.  
I've always wished there were more direct ways to express my  
feelings. But, if I do this, see...you can sense my feelings,  
right? The warmth, the weight and the feelings. I'm so glad I  
have a body to convey it all.

---

[The next day, Ashley is alone in the Chateau's bridge.]

Ashley: Weren't you the one who wanted to fight together?  
So why are you keeping quiet and fighting alone, Irving?

[Lilka walks in.]

Lilka: And I wanted to get here first, too. Not this time, I guess.

Ashley: Lilka!

[Kanon walks in.]

Kanon: Everyone is thinking the same thing.

[Tim walks in.]

Tim: We all want to hear from Irving before we decide.

[Brad walks in.]

Brad: You weren't thinking of going alone, were you!?

[Marivel walks in.]

Marivel: Hmphh...they're all crazy.

Ashley: Everyone.

[The Chateau's crew are present as well.]

Kate: This isn't all of us.

Amy: Everyone, everyone! He came back!

Ashley: Do you know what it's like outside? The enroachment has gone much farther since yesterday. It's much more dangerous now.

Lilka: So now there is danger wherever we do.

Tim: Let's go! Ashley!

Brad: You've lost, Ashley.

Ashley: Everyone... Let's go, then! We will finish everything once and for all!

=====

```
#####  
#[0.3] Island Outpost (OPTIONAL) #  
#####
```

[Lilka gets her hands on the TeleportOrb and uses it. It accidentally takes them to Island Outpost.]

Man: Did you come form the outside? I mean, of course you did. Ha. Ha. That's embarrassing. I've been researching Crest Sorcery here. Can you tell? Of course you can. This is my studio. After years of research, I just finished a summary of the lineage of High Level Magic. High Level Magic?! What do you think? Surprised? Of course you are.

Man: I guess having come to this remote island from Sielje Region years ago has finally paid off. Crest Sorcery to surpass all that has come before. You want to know right? I know just how you feel. I'd love to teach it. I'd love to teach it to everyone! You understand that don't you? Now there's a favor I need to ask of you. You'll hear me out, right? You'll hear me out, right?

Man: I want you to deliver a Book on High Level Magic to Karayan in the Sielje Region. They must be able to impart the mysteries of High Level Magic to guild members across the land. This is the Magic Book I wrote titled, "High Crest". Please deliver it for me.

[Lilka acquires: High Crest.]

Man: I forgot to tell you-- My name is Day. John Day. Tell him I sent you.



[Lilka & Co. goes to Karayan in the Sielje Region.]

Karayan: Why, it's a "High Crest" magic book from Mr. Day! That's wonderful! Mr. Day really came through for us! Thank you for bringing it to me. I will go spread the word about these new Crest Spells! Good day to you.

[Karayan disappears.]

-----  
[Some days later, after Karayan has spread the word about the high level magic.]

Karayan: I'm tired from spreading knowledge of High Level Magic across the earth. But indefatigable Mr. Day has plunged into his next project. I can't lose face in front of him.

[Lilka goes to Island outpost.]

Day: Could it be you're here because of my magic? That's right isn't it? That's right. I've been waiting for a young sorceress like you to come along. I want you to have the "Extend", a result of all my research. You'll take it, won't you?

[Lilka acquires the Force: "Extend".]

Day: This increases the magic's power to 1.5 times normal. The sphere of the magic's effect changes as follows: "Single Enemy to Group" and "Group to All". It 痴 amazing, isn't it? It's amazing, isn't it? It's not really a big deal. Hmm...I wonder what should I research next?

=====

#####  
#[0.4] Guardians of Filgaia #  
#####

\_\_\_\_\_  
/Fengalon/  
γγγγγγγγγγ  
~~Wind Tiger's Den~~

Voice from the Stone: I'm Fengalon, the one who can't be controlled by anyone. I'm the Guardian of the Wind.

[Fengalon acquired.]

Fengalon: I'm fed up with being restrained by a Medium. I entrust my true release to you.

-----

\_\_\_\_\_  
/Noua Shax/  
γγγγγγγγγγ  
~~Thunder Lion Cage~~

Voice from the Stone: I'm Noua Shax, the Guardian of Lightning. To make someone so frail work, our demands our cruel.

[Noua Shax acquired.]

Noua Shax: Oh well...I'll ignore my pains for this beautiful golden mane.  
Watch until your heart's content.

---

\_\_\_\_\_  
/Aru Sulato/

ㄱㄱㄱㄱㄱㄱㄱㄱㄱㄱ

~~Abandoned Icebox~~

Voice from the Stone: I am Aru Sulato, the Guardian of Snow.  
I'll respond to your call.

[Aru Sulato acquired.]

Aru Sulato: My freezing, silent world... My powers, in an almost eternal  
world, purifies the evil ones.

---

\_\_\_\_\_  
/Stare Roe/

ㄱㄱㄱㄱㄱㄱㄱㄱㄱ

~~Shining Garden~~

Voice from the Stone: I am the Guardian of Light, Stare Roe. I will entrust  
my power of light to you.

[Stare Roe acquired.]

Stare Roe: The power that brings light to clear away darkness-if you need  
me, I will respond.

---

\_\_\_\_\_  
/Leita Salk/

ㄱㄱㄱㄱㄱㄱㄱㄱㄱ

~~Dark Reason~~

Voice from the Stone: The curtain of night enclosing is Leita Salk's Dark  
Reason. Accept it without fear.

[Leita Salk acquired.]

Leita Salk: To judge in darkness is to defy reason. Those who live in  
reason will bring rest and calm.

---

\_\_\_\_\_  
/Ge Rantos/

ㄱㄱㄱㄱㄱㄱㄱㄱㄱ

~~Lost City Archeim~~

Voice from the Stone: I am the ruler of "death", Ge Rantos.

[Ge Rantos acquired.]

Ge Rantos: My power is an endlessly circulating power.

-----  
          
/Dan Dairam/

??????????????

~~Promised Catacombs~~

Voice from the Stone:

Time turns, passing on, flowing endlessly, then ceases. Dan Dairam's  
eternal spiral.

Dan Dairam acquired.

Dan Dairam:

But time doesn't flow equally. If in the limited time, you burn up your  
life, I must seek justice.

=====

#####  
#[0.5] Werewolf's Den #  
#####

~~Werewolf's Den~~

[ARMS explores the den and finds a glyph on the ground.]

Tim: I sense the waves of a Guardian. A guardian must be near here.  
But this is a strange, powerful feeling. This is the first time  
I've ever felt this particular sensation.

Lilka: A strange Guardian? It doesn't mean that...

Brad: I can't believe this is a sacred ground dedicated to the  
Guardians.

Kanon: .....

Marivel: It's a waste of time. We need to move on.  
We have no time to waste.

A Voice from Nowhere in Particular: I am the Guardian of Desire. If you want  
this power, give my name.

-> If Ashley gives the wrong name.

A Voice from Nowhere in Particular: Those who don't know my name--  
leave here immediately.

-> If Ashley gives the name "Lucied".

[Ashley teleports somewhere.]

Lilka: Ashley!

[Ashley appear to be in a dark space.]

Ashley: Where is this?

A Voice from Nowhere in Particular: I've been waiting for you,

Ashley. The one with a connection to the Blazing Demon,  
Ashley Winschester.

Ashley: Who are you?!

[Lucied appears.]

Ashley: Lucied!

Lucied: It's been a long time, Ashley.

Ashley: Why are you here?

Lucied: I've been waiting for you. Anastasia asked me to.  
She wanted me to help you.

Ashley: Anastasia wanted you to...

Lucied: But it's meaningless if you aren't the type to use me correctly.  
I am the Guardian of Desire. I only lend my powers to those who  
can make use of my powers. Do you understand my meaning?

Ashley: .....

Lucied: A person's strong desires become my food, the source of my  
strength. It's the flesh and blood I need for my power--a  
desire stronger than any other. I ask you, what is it you  
desire?

Ashley: What I desire? I desire a peaceful, daily life. Marina is there  
with Grandma, Brad and Lilka too, along with everyone from the  
ARMS. Days with no need to fight, days with no disputes.

Lucied: Is that your hope?

Ashley: I don't wish to be a "hero" now! There was a time when I wanted  
to be a "hero", but that was to protect everyone's happiness. I  
didn't want to see anyone suffer. But there's a simpler answer.  
The truth is I wanted to protect Marina's smiling face, so I ...

Lucied: It doesn't matter what the power is. Power is neither good nor  
evil. Power can become good or evil depending upon who uses it.  
The hope is the same. What you wish for is the same as  
Anastasia. A good desire--a desire suited to become my flesh  
and blood.

Ashley: Lucied.

Lucied: Your strength will come from the hope wrapped around your body.  
When you desire power, call out my name. For the daily life  
you desire, I will become the sword to battle all kinds of  
blazes. I use people's strong hopes for my power. I, the  
Guardian of Desire, Lucied. I will be with you until the day  
when your hope has been exhausted.

[Attack "Mad Lucied" acquired.]

[Ashley appears back in the Den.]

Brad: Are you OK, Ashley?



Colette: But there's another me who is happy that I am like this.  
It's as if there are two of me.

[Tim stands.]

Tim: Same for me. When I'm with Colette, I feel calm and relieved,  
while at the same time I'm wildly excited. I think the  
"present", the time I now spend with Colette is important for me.

Colette: Yes! Me too. I feel like the "present" time I spend with Tim  
too.

Tim: Colette...I want to protect you from all hardship and pain.  
It's because you are the most important woman (person) to me.

Colette: Thank you.

[Tim sits down, moving closer to Colette.]

Tim: My desire to protect you is gradually making me stronger. I've  
learned that thinking of someone other than myself is very  
powerful. I mean, I've become this strong because of Colette.  
To be honest, I don't want to fight, but in order to protect what  
I have "now", I will fight.

Colette: Tim...

Tim: I wonder if this is what it means to "like" someone. I feel so  
warm. I'll fight to protect you. My heart must be stronger.

[The Stone Goddess emits a bright red light.]

Stone Goddess: The desire leads to strength and reaches as affection. The  
long extinct desire has been reawakened by the one who hasn't  
forgotten "love". If what you desire is each other's hearts,  
you best stop me. When hardship confronts you two, my power  
will become a ceaseless tie that will have you rid it all.  
I am Raftina, the Guardian Lord who guards people's hearts  
and Filgaia. Love's embrace will become a gentle enveloping  
strength.

[Raftina acquired.]

-----

---

/The Guardian of Courage/  
yyyyyyyyyyyyyyyyyyyyyyyyyyyyyyyy

[Brad checks on Billy in a house in T'bok Village.]

Billy: The light... it's expanding...

Brad: Wow... [Dumbfounded silence]

[Stone Lion starts to give off a silent white light...]

Brad: What could that light be? ...Billy...

[A scene follows where Brad and Billy are standing in space.]

Brad: A "hero" should be a symbol of how to control one's power.

I am beginning to understand your true feelings.

Billy: .....

Brad: No. Strictly speaking, you just might reach a different conclusion.

Billy: A different conclusion?

Brad: Yes. We don't have a need for "heroes" anymore. That's what I believe now.

Billy: Are you saying "heroes" are unnecessary?

Brad: That's not really what I meant. A "hero" isn't bestowed on you, nor they can be relied on. Nor do they have shape. But a "hero" exists in the hearts of anyone who tries to accomplish something.

Billy: .....

Brad: That's... essentially what you meant when you said a hero shouldn't be a symbol.

Billy: Hmm. If that's what you think, it must be right. For you to say that, you, the one who knows me best, means...

Brad: A "hero"... isn't just a convenient, powerful being that always saves people from serious danger. A "hero" symbolic role is... to show everyone that they possess within themselves similar powers. Another way of putting it is courage.

Billy: And your current team members taught you this?

Brad: Yes. They made it clear to me. They've continued to fight of their own will and strength rather than rely on the "Hero of Slayheim". They may not realize this, but they have become "heroes" themselves. And when this is repeated by others, then "heroes" really will no longer be necessary.

Billy: I'm glad I left things in your hands. You're my "hero".

Brad: A "hero" embodies the will to show courage. They personify bravery. Shake off doubts and step forward. Follow the road indicated with the spiritual strength to never lose.

[The Stone Lion emits a bright blue light.]

Stone Lion: Desire leads to strength and reaches me as a guidance . The long extinct desire has been reawakened by the one who hasn't forgotten "courage". If what you desire is strength of heart, you best stop me. When confusion clouds your path, my power becomes the sword to crush the universe and solve the problem. I am Justine, the Guardian Lord who guards people's hearts and Filgaia. The sword of courage will make the heart full of strength.

[Justine acquired.]

-----

---

/The Guardian of Hope/

????????????????????????????

[Ashley talks to Marina on the 2nd Floor of the Valeria Chateau.]

Marina: Oh, Ashley! Welcome ba...

[Stone Drago starts to give off a silent white light...]

Ashley: What the... What's this light?

Marina: Ashley... What's going... Oh

[A scene follows where Ashley can see little Marina is chasing little Ashley. Little Ashley leaves the scene while little Marina stops chasing.]

Ashley: Marina, this is your universe, right? It's you, yourself, right?

[Little Marina looks at him.]

Ashley: Marina.

[Little Marina becomes the older Marina.]

Marina: I had wished days like this would last forever. I never doubted that days like this would continue. Ashley and I are here. The plain old everyday world is still here. An ordinary daily life is going to continue ordinary forever.

[Ashley comes closer to Marina, seemingly wanting to embrace her.]

Marina: Don't come here. Don't destroy eternity. I'm afraid. I've had enough. To wound and be wounded... How can something so scary happen on a regular basis? I just want to be with Ashley. Fighting is to protect eternity and for the time when I didn't know Ashley. For nothing to change, for everything to stay as the "eternity" from before...

Ashley: Is that what Marina hopes for? Do you want to believe that eternity is when nothing changes? Nothing changing... I don't think such a thing exists. Times change and evolve. We are forever encountering moments of continual change. This could cause despair, or it could lead to a different response. It's possible to want to see how the world turns out, to see what the future will bring. That's what I believe.

Marina: Hope?

Ashley: Yes. The power to wish for tomorrow. The power to wish for a day you have not yet seen.

Marina: I wonder if I have that power?

Ashley: Of course you do! But you won't find it in "eternity".

Marina: You're right. I understand it now. Ashley taught me. My wanting to be with Ashley is not "eternity". Forever, for sure and ever more! From now on, we'll always be together. That's right. Hope is on the other side of this moment, far away from "eternity".



[Ashley embraces Marina.]

Ashley & Marina: My wish is...my hope is always for the future.

[The Stone Drago emits a bright green light.]

Stone Drago: Desire leads to strength and reaches me as light. The long, extinct desire has been awakened by one who remembers hope. Stop me if you seek the future. When dark clouds block tomorrow, my power will become a westerly wind to pierce and dispel it. I am Zephyr, the Guardian Lord who guards people's hearts and Filgaia. Hope's light will become the power to expand the future.

[Zephyr acquired.]

-----

```
#####  
#[0.7] Fab Science Lab #  
#####
```

[At Gunner's Heaven - Damzen City Saloon...]

Luka: Well, you've certainly got some odd friends. What's with 'em?

Marivel: What an incredibly rude little girl! You should apologize!  
These are my friends made with ultra high-tech, Hob and Nob.

Luka: So they're machines, huh? I know an even better laboratory. Something big bro' and I heard when we were being Mercs a while back... Apparently there's a mysterious lab surrounded by mountains south of Sylvaland. I bet they're REALLY ultra high-tech!

Marivel: The things this girl says! That's OK. I'll show her that the REAL rulers of Filgaia are the Crimson Nobles. Now to destroy the lab! Or...maybe we should just check it out...Let's go, Ashley!

~~Fab Science Lab~~

The long awaited...: The MONK let out a fart! Turn around slowly... If we have any behavior that heats things up in the living room, I can't help but drag irons. It shines! It spins! It makes noise! Release it for the Red Beam Gun to scatter bullets. A shocking scene might play itself out right here before us.

[Liz and Ard enters.]

Lilka: Ahh!

Liz: I'll scream! Someone help! Someone! Trespassing!

Ard: Ard...Ard, Ard..rd, Ard.

Ashley: You're alive!

Liz: Earthworms and crickets are so, so cool because they're alive. Being so alive is so unbelievably fabulous!

Ashley: That's what I usually believe. But why are you here?  
Weren't you in the Heimdal Gazzo?

Lilka: After that I didn't see you around anymore.

Liz: Oh, no! Don't bring that up! Don't go inquiring about my past!

[Liz stands under the spotlight.]

Liz: That day, I...

Ashley: (Hm. He's started talking about it himself.)

Lilka: (So, he wants us to listen. There are lots like him around.)

Liz: Actually, we weren't on the Heimdal Gazzo.

Ashley: But it was Odessa's final battle. Are you really one of them?

Liz: Actually, I am a little unsure about that too. I guess that shows how much they valued me. They only requested up (Defcon) B.

Ashley: You guys can't help but get in the way and hold us back.

Liz: I'd hoped to do a military maneuver with little Vins at least once.

Ard: Ard, Ard.

Lilka: (That reminds me... I have never seen them performing maneuvers with the Odessa soldiers.)

Ashley: (Certainly, probably, they were just being used.)

Lilka: (How sad! How pitiful!)

Liz: It seems the top contender gathering sympathy votes. What I want isn't anything like that! I have a dream to fulfill, even if it means working with terrorists. I want the endless sea of stars.

Ashley: Are you all right?

Liz: I'm a stickler for manners. How dare you tell me that.

Ashley: But you always say such outrageous nonsense. But really, why did such... "unique" creatures as you two decide to team up with Odessa?

Liz: Do you know the smell of the earth and our true feelings? I was lured in by the Red Tractor Beam. I'll divulge the secret, secret past.

Ashley: Please, keep it brief.

Liz: I got involved in terrorism so I could return to my homeland. I won't do anything bad from now on.

Ashley: Wow. You can really do it when you try. To be concise... Science, huh?

Lilka: (Stop it Ashley. It's as if you're making fun of science.)

Liz: Science. Right, science. Science converted me.

Ashley: How can you say that after you've made such a mistake with science?

Liz: I can't believe it! All I want to do is to return to my hometown. If my dreams come true, all creatures will be healthy and peace will be assured. Don't want things so peaceful that everyone's bored. Finally, the idea of food vanishes. The smallest morsel is refused and the sutra's chant will quiet. Wow! I almost was enlightened just imagining it.

Lilka: I wonder if he'll really be all right?

Ashley: You have no choice but to believe. So what are we supposed to do?

Liz: Wow! I'm so marvelously happy! Now, losers of the combat unit-- please show me around here, at my own home.

Lilka: This here is ours?

Ashley: Wait a minute. What do you mean you want to be shown around?

Liz: We were locked out by the security system. Finally, the computers rebelled. This is the first class Hard SF. Think you're so smart. But to quote a masked wrestler, "Don't enter a tiger's den and there won't be any orphans". If you face adversity now, everything else will be easy.

Ashley: The only thing I can think is that they're both bugged. Well, all right. I'll show you around. Just go on home or wherever.

Liz: How exciting!!! The young one changed his mind. Hip Hip Hooray!

Ard: Ard...Ar...Ard!

-> If they try to leave the Fab Science Lab

Liz: Running away? It is I, the one you all loved. If I go off to some remote region, you'll probably never meet a fine hero like me again.

-Ashley: Ha. Ha. Ha. It's dangerous, so you can just leave it at that.

-Brad: .....

-Lilka: Oh, come on! Coming out in a spotlight like...

-Tim: I understand, so please don't get gloomy.

-Kanon: I don't like such responsibility.  
Can you make Ashley my partner?

-Marivel: It offends my pride to play the victim so blatantly. It's important to know that the bullied have their own reasons too.

Liz:           Whoa!   How delightful!

[They move on inside and finds a weird object.]

Ashley:        What is it?

Liz:            It's a UFO we built to take us back to our sea of stars.

Lilka:         A sea of stars?   What kind of creatures are you?

Liz:            You have so generously exposed publicly our dazzling form.  
Hidden in this forceful, stout body and with our status,  
we are...

Ashley:        You're taking too long.   You're leaving us behind with this.

Liz:            (edited) ...and so that's it in a nutshell.   I am a Lizardian  
I came by air... or you could say we crashed.

Lilka:         No!   Really?!   So, you're aliens?   No wonder!   I mean your  
perspective is totally warped.

Ashley:        OK, let's blast the invaders!

Liz:            Hey, what're you doing? Is this a joke?  
Why the sudden change?

Ard:            Ard...Ard, Ard! Ard, Ard!

Liz:            Either way... We didn't belong to a Planetary Federation nor was  
there a rescue squad coming to this remote region.   So then, the  
problem must get solved by yourself.   Do you call this acting  
like a victim?   That was wrong, right?

Ard:            Ard-

Ashley:        Regardless, it should be easy if you only need to return home.  
So, we'll banish you from Planet F.   No.   No.   Really.  
We'll send you off.

Lilka:         It's a decision that makes everyone happy.

Liz:            A special "Space Engine" has already been attached.  
All we have to do is get in.

[They move along, finding a lock door and some consoles.]

Ashley:        What's this?

Liz:            It's a security system I set up.

Lilka:         Then hurry up and do something about it.

Liz:            With the computer revolt, it won't even recognize its master.  
Time for the Hard SF to demonstrate its capabilities.

Ashley:        What is a "Hard SF"?   You've been talking about it for awhile  
now.

Liz: Hard, soft ...regular?

Ashley: We'll leave that alone and just deactivate it ourselves.

Liz: I remember that response!

[They respond correctly to the questions given by the system and the door opens. Moving, along...]

Ashley: Something's happening!

Liz: Now, Bulkogidon is revived, crushing the forbidden silence!

Lilka: Is this the Bulkogidon that you mentioned before?

Liz: You! A savage and miraculous symbol of destruction who takes on a woeful pose--Bulkogidon is here now! Bulkogidon! All together now-- Bulkogidon!

Ard: Ard...Ard, Ar...Ard!

Lilka: But this computer is broken, right? Then it probably can't tell who's an ally and who's the enemy, right?

[Dumbfounded silence.]

Liz: Help! Save me! You reliable, trustworthy soul!

Ashley: Why should I look after you?!

[BOSS: Rampaging Monster Robot - Bulkogidon]

[The party destroys Bulkogidon.]

Liz: Whoa! My Bulkogidon!

Ashley: We've won, so you better just give up now.

Liz: Good-bye! You giant who taught me about justice and courage...  
...Bulkogidon!

Ard: Ard!

Ashley: (Giant?) You show empathy for the strangest things.  
Let's move on.

[Moving on, the party gets on the platform above the spaceship.]

Liz: Whoa! Seeing it so closely really fills me with awe. After all,  
it's a Space Engine "Streamroller" of my own design.  
To have this shape fly...

Ard: Ard!

Ashley: Time to let 'er rip! We'll see how the experiment fares on this run.

Liz: You sure blurt out very calmly some very scary things.

[Barking, and meows can be heard, then A dog and four kitties enter

appear from behind.]

Lilka:           What is it? It's not a dog catcher's house? You're not involved in some kind of animal trade are you?

Liz:             Why were we chased down? We're blood brothers. Adoring ideal scientists form a happy but embarrassing destined partnership.

Ashley:          To summarize, you know them?

Liz:             You could say they're comrades. We had them volunteer to help with our departure to the homeland.

Ard:             Ard...Ard!

Lilka:           You are popular in some very odd places.

Ashley:          (Maybe the natural world took action to control the ecological system.)

Ashley:          What are you going to do? Are you going to take them along?

Liz:             Parting is most sad, but I can't let you do that. While we are fated to go we're also fated to stay and protect. Entrust Filgaia to their care.

Ashley:          Really, that's very cool. I doubt the wisdom of leaving our star in their care so easily.

Liz:             The sea of space, the sea of stars... Separate. Cut. Words for takeoff. To be sent off by those I adore... Off we go to the sea of stars.

Ard:             Ard...Ard!

[The ship's door opens.]

Liz:             We're flying off!

[Liz, and Ard drop in and the ship takes off.]

Lilka:           Off they went.

Ashley:          Yep.

[Some object falls from above. Ashley checks it out.]

Ashley:          What is this?

Lilka:           Wow! Do you think these could be UFO parts?

Ashley:          Whoa!!! Evacuate immediately!

[The party gets out of the way, then UFO parts come crashing down. Liz and Ard come falling, as well.]

Liz:             My soul was pulled in by Filgaia's gravity.

Ard:             Ard, Ard.

@Liz: It makes me so mad I'm trembling with anger!

@Ard: Ard, Ar-Ar-Ard.

-----

#####  
#[2.11] Last Ignition #  
#####

<Call Menu>

Amy: >Um, hello? I'm tracing you guys, so you don't have a thing to worry about!

Kate: >NOW I'm worried...

Amy: >Oh, K, you're such a meanie.

~~Spiral Tower~~

[The party moves down the tower. In a room, there's a puzzle in which they must press some plates in the right order.]

\*The spiral turns from the Moon to the Sun won't change the past, the future nor the present.

1-The lost tale of Genesis will hereby be imparted. Looking down are the new Moon and the old Moon, king mother's face and cruel queen of the night.

2-The lost tale of Genesis will hereby be imparted. I am Tiu, god of the sky and war, bringer of the flame of disaster to destroy all creation.

3-The lost tale of Genesis will hereby be imparted. I am Wotan, leader of the Wild Hunt, a band of specters riding the winds of winter storms.

4-The lost tale of Genesis will hereby be imparted. I am Thor, god of thunder, wielder of the hammer Mjolnir and the defender of the Aesir.

5-The lost tale of Genesis will hereby be imparted. I am Frigg, goddess of love and fertility. After losing my husband Od, my tears turned to gold.

6-The lost tale of Genesis will hereby be imparted. I am Saturn, god of agriculture and ruler of the world during the age of happiness.

7-The lost tale of Genesis will hereby be imparted. The sun glitters with hope. If one's heart is filled with hope, darkness exits and the sun appears.

[The party gets past the puzzle room.]

[The party descends further until they encounter a boss.]

Kanon: It's powerful pressure! Here it comes!

[BOSS: Saucer Organism - Grodine]

[The party beats the organism.]

Lilka: It's a long road ahead! Let's hurry up, everyone!

[The party descends further until they reach the bottom.]

Brad: To get this far and still have people get in my way.

[BOSS: Terrible Guardian Monster - Manufestu]

[They beat the terrible monster.]

Tim: Huh? This is strange. What could this feeling be?  
Feels like I'm near a Guardian.

[The party approaches the light.]

Lilka: Wait a minute... What in the world is this?

Ashley: It's like an ocean, but something different.

Brad: .....

Tim: ...it's a Guardian. This blue mud seems to be one single  
Guardian.

Ashley: How can you tell?

Tim: I feel it. It has wavelengths similar to other Guardians.  
I once heard something about a blue sea of mud flowing deep  
under the bowels of the earth. The being that was the origin of  
everything, the Guardian of Mud, Glaive Le Gable.

Kanon: The origin of everything... So, the Kuiper Belt has been eating  
the Guardian, the so-called source of life, even advancing on  
Filgaia.

Ashley: Let's go everyone!

[They are transported to the center of Filgaia...the Glaive Le Gable.]

~~Glaive Le Gable~~

<Call Menu>

Kate: >Give my regards to the Chief, everyone.

Amy: >Oh, come on, Kate! Don't look so gloomy!

Erwin: >Ohhh. Amy's right. Cheer up, mademoiselle.

Amy: >See? I was right. Yeah. Our job now is to cheer everyone up,  
right? So go out there and kick some butt, alright?

[Ashley & Co. moves through Glaive Le Gable until...]

Irving's Voice: So, you finally made it here.



Ashley: That voice is Irving. Where? Where are you? Show yourself!

Irving's Voice: The Kuiper Belt was once again trapped in the "vessel". But the Kuiper Belt gushed out of the vessel and now, Filgaia itself is... It's roots have divided and spread to even the Guardian of Mud, Glaive Le Gable. At this rate, no matter how much we attack the body, the roots will get energy to endlessly regenerate. First, the three roots extending out from the Kuiper Belt must be cut and their regeneration stopped. I pray for the safety and success of the ARMS members. Do this while my "will" keeps all of the Kuiper Belt from spilling out of the vessel.

Ashley: Irving, what's going on? .....

Ashley: All I can do is believe what Irving told me. It's necessary to cut these three roots to destroy the main body of the Kuiper Belt. Let's split the party into four now! Separate units will attack each root and the fourth unit will attack the main body.

[The party splits into four. Three of them will take care of the roots and the rest will take care of the main body.]

Ashley: Be careful! All right, let's go!

[Tim reaches the First Root.]

[BOSS: Enroaching Parallel Universe - First Root]

Tim: This is part of the parallel universe trying to consume us.

[Kanon reaches the Second Root.]

[BOSS: Enroaching Parallel Universe - Second Root]

Kanon: This is how it should be! This sense of woe will be perfect for my exorcising evil.

[Marivel reaches the Third Root.]

[BOSS: Enroaching Parallel Universe - Third Root]

Marivel: Hm! This is so strange!

[They exterminate the Roots.]

[Meanwhile, in Valeria Chateau's deck, civilians and solders are gathered. Marina, Tony, and Scott are present, as well.]

Meria Boule Soldier: It's dangerous here! Hurry and get inside!

[The King of Meria arrives.]

Meria Boule Soldier: Your Highness?! To come to such a place...

King of Meria Boule: This is...this ghastly thing is the battle risking Filgaia's fate... the battle of the "heroes".

Marina: No, Sir. Everyone has weaknesses and frailties. They're just humans like us. They're humans who shed tears and blood. They

get hurt and ragged, but still fight. It's not a battle of "heroes". It's people just like us fighting... So, we have to fight with them.

King of Meria Boule: But I am powerless... Fighting is...

Marina: Let's believe... That'll be our battle. To offer a prayer... Intense feelings always reach the intended. To one's prayers and goodwill distance makes no difference no matter how far it is. I don't want to let go of the hands clasped.

Tony: Our support won't reach from here! We need to move closer, Scott!!

Scott: In my opinion, the power of emotions is simply unrealistic! But... To not be able to believe in my friends here and now... that's isn't a world worth... It's not logic! It's my own conclusion!

Marina: ..... Lilka and Tim. Brad, Kanon and Marivel. Come back safely! Please...Ashley... Fight... ..and...

[Back in Glaive Le Gable, the last group moves ahead and finds Irving and Altaecia.]

Ashley: Irving?

Irving: Why? That's what your face is saying.

Ashley: I don't understand. I just don't understand! We fought side by side to protect Filgaia, right? Then, why?

Irving: You're right. I fought for Filgaia too. I'm no different from you on that point.

Ashley: Then what are you thinking? What are you trying to do here?!

Irving: I knew of the threat the Kuiper Belt posed before anyone else. To fight the being consuming the world, a large power is needed, almost as large as Filgaia. But there are as many opinions as there are people. People aren't strong enough to instantly unify against such an unimaginable threat. That's why I created a clearly perceptible threat for people to experience. That was...

Ashley: ...the terrorist organization "Odessa".

Irving: An easily understood threat disturbs people more easily. What would happen if the Defenders of Justice showed up? yup. You ARMS guys showed up. People began to unite across national boundaries. You already know that. To oppose the Kuiper Belt, all countries set cooperative policies to fight against it, together. The prison of Mana, Trapezohedron, couldn't have been invoked without cooperation from all three nations.

Ashley: But what you've done is wrong! People have been hurt from your plan. Some have even lost their lives.

Irving: It was all to protect Filgaia, to protect the future of humanity.

Ashley: I can't sacrifice an individual for the larger goal.

Irving: ..... If I could have gotten the power to fight, I'd have... If I could have gotten the Argetlahm, I would have taken such measures. But without becoming a "hero", I won't be able to save Filgaia!

[Light is emitted from Altaecia's body. All of a sudden Ashley's party sees themselves inside a lifeform.]

Ashley: What? What is it?

Irving: It's clear the physical attacks on the "parallel universe", a conceptual being, are meaningless. So, think of the universe as a lifeform. Consider it a... "spirit" and seal it in a vessel. In essence, the flesh that should have been destroyed is created. It's what I suggested to Odessa ...by using the Demon Summoning my sister will have inside her... by making Altaecia a vessel, the abominable lifeform will...

Ashley: Stop! How far will you go to achieve your goals? Are you saying you offered your own sister as a sacrifice?

Irving: It wasn't to be a sacrifice, but to be a "hero". Not the <Sword Mage>, but the Madonna of Destruction summoned under Valeria's name.

[Heartbeats can be heard.]

[BOSS: Enroaching Parallel Universe - Kuiper Core]

Ashley: Anastasia never wanted anything like this!

Irving: I don't expect you to forgive me. In order to save Filgaia, I had no choice. ....

Irving: We have to destroy the Kuiper Belt on our own! Before my consciousness gets swallowed up...

Ashley: Is it already too late?

Irving: I know myself better than anyone else. But it's strange. Even though I know we'll slash each other, I have no fear or regrets. I'm happy. I'm happy I had the opportunity to be with you all, rather than am sad we won't see each other again. I'm really happy I got to be with you all and that we could protect Filgaia together.

Ashley: I promised Anastasia that I'd stop Valeria's suffering. Irving, Altaecia... Let's fight together!

[The last group destroys the Kuiper Core.]

[They meet up with the others, who destroyed the roots, and walk together. They stop along the way.]

Lilka: Hey, we won, right? We all were able to save Filgaia, right?

Tim: Then why is everyone so sad?

Lilka: Were we wrong?

Tim: Because we won, we were right, right?

Brad: "Because we won, we were right" isn't a reason.

Kanon: Everything that happened here is a fact.  
That's all there is to it.

Ashley: We didn't win or lose. It's just over, finished.

[They are about to continue to walk when a black light suddenly come out from Ashley.]

-----  
[Ashley sees himself in somewhere. The Argetlahm is sticking on the ground.]

Ashley: Whoa! What in the world happened? Where is everyone?  
Where am I?

Voice Heard Somewhere: It's the world where "I" am. It's where the  
destruction began.

Ashley: Who are you?

Voice Heard Somewhere: Lord Blazer... You ask who I am? That's harsh after  
we've been together for so long and even fought, too.

Ashley: No! you are the disaster that turned Filgaia red with fire.

Lord Blazer: I've finally been freed from those chains. Great to have a body  
again. I owe you my thanks. It was good fortune to live inside  
your body after being trapped behind the Event Horizon. The  
negative feeling that grew inside you during battles are now the  
food that sustains me.

Ashley: My negative feelings? You're saying I helped resurrect you?!

Lord Blazer: It's not just you. Swirling inside all humans are the most  
unsightly and strong energy forces. In your battles you've seen  
the true nature of people and it's that negativity that I feed  
on. I'll give you the honor of witnessing the world burning  
into oblivion.

Ashley: Stop it! Now!

Lord Blazer: Are you going to draw it? That abominable Argetlahm. That is  
definitely the absolute perfect sword to destroy me. But don't  
say you forgot that you weren't able to draw the Argetlahm. Once  
you had my strength, the strength you tried to destroy, then you  
finally got the sword. Now that I'm free of your body, you're  
only a mere human. You cannot draw Argetlahm. Argetlahm is  
meant to be wielded by the "Hero of the Sword". Lament the era  
of no "heroes"! And live in fear of the future that will  
burn to smithereens.

Ashley: It's definite I'm not the "hero" chosen by the sword.

Lord Blazer: Then, why struggle? Don't resist me! Accept the future!

Ashley: The world we live in... the all-important Filgaia... is not such a puny world that it's sustained by the power of only a "hero". This world is full of the interactions and exchanges of the people and their thoughts, so... the power that sustains the universe exists in Filgaia. It's the power of all life!

[Ashley grabs the Argetlahm.]

Ashley: A time without "heroes"... That's what you said. No. No. Not "without" heroes, but an era that doesn't need heroes. We don't need a "hero"!!!! There's no value in a world protected by such things. If everyone's hearts become one, then we can rise and stand together. We can support the world without sacrificing a "hero". Miracles can happen! We can never make the same mistake Irving made.

[The screen switches to Lilka & Co., standing up and lending their powers to Ashley.]

Ashley: I can tell now. Our hearts are becoming one. The Argetlahm isn't something to be pulled out by the hero alone.

[With the powers lend to him Ashley was able to draw the sword Argetlahm.]

[BOSS: Blaze of Disaster - Lord Blazer]

[Ashley appearance becomes of that of the "Hero of the Sword".]

Lord Blazer: Is that figure the "Hero of the Sword"? ...from Argetlahm?!

Ashley: Let's go. Let's all go fight this together!

[Everyone prays for the success of he who fights.]

---

[Anastasia, in her world.]

Anastasia: That's it. That's it exactly! The Argetlahm isn't a weapon to bury demons. By gathering the will to live into power, it becomes the key to open the door to the future. It's not a power to be wielded alone. It's a power for everyone to wield together

---

[Colette and the people of Baskar.]

Colette: Has it arrived? Has my prayer arrived? If it won't arrive when I pray alone, we'll pray together as one. Everyone, everyone was born on this star, and lived here.

---

[Terry and everyone on Sielje.]

Terry: Everything depends on being alive. Only when you're alive do you get to fall in love or get to fight with others. If tomorrow comes because today's life light starts the creation of the future then... this light should be delivered to those battling at the end of today!

---

[Noel and the people of Guild Galad.]

Noel: I can clearly feel it! Right now, all the souls in Filgaia are trying to join together! It's stopping all life from fighting simply to keep alive. We are not powerless! We have the strength of our united hearts. Take this power and throw it against the wars confronting you!

---

[Merrill, Rassyu, and the people of T'bok Village.]

Merrill: This battle is to save our precious world! That's why we must fight too! We don't need to be protected by someone special. Because it's important, so very important, we must protect it ourselves. If someone has to be the "hero", then anyone should be able to become the "hero". The prayers must have reached them, right? Everyone is fighting to protect Filgaia now.

---

[Tony, Scott, Kate, Amy, and the rest of the Chateau's crew.]

Tony: We're not going to push it all off on Dude. Because it's so important, we're going to protect it with our own hands. I'm not sure we can handle it on our own, so if we get into trouble, help us out, Dude. OK? When you get into a bind, the Young ARMS could help you out in return. We like Filgaia just like everyone else!

---

[Marina, Irving, Altaecia, and the people of Meria.]

Marina: I love it! This world, the life we live, and Ashley all... I like today better than yesterday, and I like the unknown tomorrow even more. Let's all head off to tomorrow together. Everyone together...

---

[With every strike of Impulse, Lord Blazer gets hit with more and more power coming from all souls on Filgaia. The combined power of everyone destroys Lord Blazer.]

-----  
[Ashley returns to Glaive Le Gable with Lilka & Co.]

Kanon: So, it's finally over.

Tim: We won, right? Ashley won, right?

Ashley: I wasn't the one that won. Everyone here and everyone waiting for us, and...

Lilka: Well... it's a victory we won together.

Brad: I'm not a "hero"! It's the future we grabbed hold of for ourselves.

Marivel: Come on, give me a break! Don't hassle me. I refuse to ever do such unsuitable work!

Ashley: Let's go home together. Let's all go home to Filgaia.

Ashley: To the world we've all been waiting for...

-----  
#####  
#[2.12] Ending #  
#####

[Ashley & Co. return to Filgaia, ending the menace of the enroaching parallel universe and Lord Blazer. They find the people of Filgaia awaiting their return. Tim approaches Colette who looks nervous.]

Tim: That was the moment the strain and tension finally slackened. More than having destroyed the Kuiper Belt or Lord Blazer, seeing everyone's laughter again makes me realize it's really over. But you all aren't the only ones laughing. I have someone waiting for me and when I heard someone saved a place for me to return to--I broke into laughter too. Colette said "thanks" to me, so I said "thanks" back. That's not so strange, is it? Because in that moment that's what I wanted to say.

-----  
[ARMS return to the Valeria Chateau and tells everything to the crew. Then, the crew can be seen performing a ceremony. The Valeria Chateau is once again flying to the clear blue sky.]

Kanon: And so everything was disclosed. At the beginning and end of this battle was a sin named Valeria. The "sin" was called a "hero". If the lives in Filgaia survived because of this sin, then its continued life at its atonement. Those who can atone are... The cross that is too heavy to bear alone is no longer so when everyone on this star supports it. Sleep now, the blood of Valeria. No one needs a "her" anymore now that they've realized their might. If the darkness meant to destroy Filgaia's future is dismantled, the chant of peace hoped for will be heard.

-----  
[People can be seen rebuilding. A man approaches Marina from behind, but she notices the man and shoos him away. The man must be the one that can always be seen outside Meria Boule's bakery, dreaming about Marina's hand-made bread. Marivel is there too, directing the workers. Tony and Scott are part of the workers.]

Marivel: No matter what you say, humans are strange creatures. Besides being frail, people get lost along the way and makes false moves. Then they sometimes don't realize their mistakes and hurt those who are close. Yet at the same time, they know how to link arms and band together. If you ask why, must you answer so? While acknowledging their own weaknesses, when they take aim at a far

goal, they join hands. Those who extend a hand and those who take the hand, can't be done without trust. Hold on there just a minute. It's not clear if humans are weak or strong from this. Well then, I'll explain it. A Crimson Noble's time is eternal.

---

[People are rebuilding in T'bok Village. Brad helps them, carrying wood. Rassyu approaches him. Merrill comes and gives Brad a towel but the wind takes it to the ground near Billy, who is seating on a wheelchair in the center. Billy tries to reach the towel but he couldn't. Brad approaches him.]

Brad: A broken clock starts to move to some rhythm. A clock that had stopped like that starts to move. Stories always start suddenly. Focus your eyes, listen closely, and pay attention. The life starting now is even more unpredictable than the battlefield. To be honest, if I were thrown out on my own, I'd be apprehensive. Yet, that doesn't mean I'd just stop. You're on my side. Better still, I have friends who'll fight beside me. Next time I'll have them help. A "hero" is very cool, but I'd never be able to fill that role. So, it's all a sham, I guess. That's not bad either.

---

[Lilka is on top of the observatory in Sielje, having a moment and looking at the stars. Terry comes to see her, but Lilka seems to be embarrass him.]

Lilka: For things to change, to go from the past to the future, is for time to pass. It is not only me. Everyone will eventually go on their way. I know. I'm not crying. I'm OK. I'm cool. That's because it's not "good-bye" but "till we meet again". No matter where you go, it's not an "end" but a "beginning". I'm happy that we're all departing for our new lives together. I mean...I was lucky enough to meet everyone here who I love with all my heart.

---

[Ashley, Marivel, Tim, Lilka, and Brad can be seen together. They split up past the crossroads. Kanon then comes down from above.]

Ashley: The King of Meria Boule has officially announced the dissolution of ARMS. Even if this didn't happen, we all would have eventually pursued our own destinies. So, today's "good-bye" isn't sad for me. Even if it was only for a moment, our hearts were once joined together as one. And even if we're not "heroes", we accomplished a major feat. If we join our souls, we can accomplish things even a noble "hero" can't do. No matter where we go, if we join our hearts, we'll always be together.

---

[Everything's peaceful in the Town of Meria. People (and animals) are doing their daily routine. Tony and Scott leave as Ashley and Marina are having their time together.]

Ashley: Well, Marina, have I changed?



Marina: Yeah, you have. You're kinda different. You look more mature.  
I think you're taller. Wait, let's see...

[Ashley embraces Marina and they...kiss.]

Marina: Your kiss is... far away...

-----  
[The credits roll.]

-In the Sword Cathedral, a letter can be seen where the Argetlahm was.

-In the Bakery, Marina is on the counter while Ashley seems to have trouble baking bread.

-On a room, Lilka is sleeping on her desk, filled with books.

-Outside a cabin, Brad is seated on a rock, after chopping wood.  
He reads a letter.

-On a ranch, Tim is carrying fodder and Colette seems to call him while holding a letter.

-On a saloon, Kanon is drinking while the place is a mess. There is a letter on the desk.

-Marivel is standing outside, reading a letter. Scott holds an umbrella to protect her from the sun. Tony is in the background kicking some tied man (The man is probably Gangal, or one of those men who abducted him early in the game). Quebeley can also be seen doing a mess in the back.

-Lastly, a table is filled pictures of Irving, Altaecia & everybody.

-----  
[A year later...]

[Everyone is gathered in front of Argetlahm.  
Lilka, Brad, Tim, Kanon, Marivel, Amy, Kate, Linda, Momo, Gabacho, Ebecho, Erwin, Terry, McGregor, Tony, Scott, and Colette.]

Lilka: It's been a long time since we've all been together like this.

Tim: I can't believe a year has passed already.

Lilka: I know. It's the one year anniversary of Irving and Altaecia's death.

Tim: Is it OK like this? Isn't this an important sword? Won't someone steal it if it's just left here on the grave?

Kanon: It doesn't come out that easily, so it's no problem.

[Ashley and Marina arrive, carrying babies.]

Ashley: Sorry I'm late.

Lilka: It's Ashley's bad habit to show up late on important occasions.

[Lilka, Kanon, Tim, Brad, and Marivel go near them.]

Lilka: But... Oh, how cute!!!

Brad: A blue sky. That something so common could be so important...

Marivel: For me, it's... a large enemy.

Tim: So right!

[Marivel scares Tim away.]

Ashley: The tale of the ordinary continues forever. That's why it's ordinary. From the past to the present, and... to the future.

Ashley: A "hero" didn't save Filgaia. It was all of us living here in Filgaia that saved it. I believe there's a great significance in that.

Lilka: Hey...Hey... You had twins, right? A girl and a boy... Have you decided on a name?

Ashley: Huh? Yeah, right.

Tim: Tell me. Tell me.

Ashley: I guess it's, uh... How embarrassing...

Marina: What pretty names. The names of these kids are the sweetest and purest in all of Filgaia.

Lilka: Really? I guess.

Ashley: Even if they get lost along the way, be sure to protect them. We're never alone, right? Right? I'm not a "hero". The protagonist of this endless tale is...

T H E E N D

=====

CREDITS

γγγγγγγγ

- GameFAQs.
- Media Vision, Contrail, SCEA/SCEI for Wild Arms 2.
- fransiska for pointing out alot of corrections:P
- Becca, Shotgunnova, Artema Dragon, and the rest of GameFAQs: Wild Arms 2 Message Board for their help and support.
- Syonyx for letting me use his ASCII art creation.

---

Copyright © 2006-2009 Unos Hambalos